

A
Harkrader - Hathaway
History



Charles Briggs Hathaway

Brewster Ladies' L.
Brewster, MA 02634

Charles B. Hathaway
42 Lakeview Ave.
Chatham, MA 02633

*Thank you send 12/13/91
CB*

December 9, 1991

Librarian
Brewster Ladies Library
Main St.
Brewster, MA 02631

Dear Librarian:

I have recently completed a family history, tracing my ancestry and that of my wife. Some of the research for this book was done at, and with the cooperation of, your library; and I should therefore like you to have the enclosed copy for your genealogical collection.

Although this book is not arranged so as to make it very useful as a reference for others, it may be of some interest.

Best wishes for the coming year.

Sincerely,

CB Hathaway
C. B. HATHAWAY

Encl: A Harkrader-Hathaway History, 1991.



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2023 with funding from
Boston Public Library

<https://archive.org/details/harkraderhathawa00hath>

*A
Harkrader - Hathaway
History*

Brewster Ladies' Library
Brewster, MA 02631

A

Harkrader - Hathaway

History



Charles Briggs Hathaway



GATEWAY PRESS, INC.
Baltimore

1991

Brewster Ladies' Library
Brewster, MA 02631

Copyright © 1991 by Charles Briggs Hathaway
All rights reserved.

No part of this book may be reproduced without
written permission of the author except for parts quoted
from other sources and so indicated by quotation marks.

Please direct all correspondence to:
Charles Briggs Hathaway
42 Lakeview Avenue
Chatham, MA 02633

Library of Congress Catalog Card Number 91-75484

Published for the author by
Gateway Press, Inc.
1001 N. Calvert Street
Baltimore, MD 21202

Printed in the United States of America

Locked case
929.2
Hat
C1
4.92
9.44

CONTENTS

Preface.....	v
Part I. The Early Arrivals.....	1
Chapter 1. The Mayflower People.....	2
Chapter 2. Plimoth Plantation.....	7
Chapter 3. Into Boston And Out Of Boston.....	11
Chapter 4. Meanwhile, Back At Plymouth.....	17
Part II. Three Routes To Danbury	23
Chapter 5. The Cape Codders.....	24
Chapter 6. By Way Of New Netherland.....	30
Chapter 7. The Connecticut Yankees.....	43
Chapter 8. Dear Julia.....	53
Part III. The Pioneers.....	61
Chapter 9. Between The Miamis.....	62
Chapter 10. Clermont County And The Methodists.....	67
Part IV. Between New Bedford And Amesbury.....	71
Chapter 11. The Last Pilgrim.....	72
Chapter 12. Marblehead.....	77
Chapter 13. The Witch.....	80
Chapter 14. Mary Abbot Wrought This.....	87
Part V. Little Rhody.....	91
Chapter 15. Aquidneck Island.....	92
Chapter 16. What State Are We In?.....	99
Chapter 17. From Two Plymouth Servants.....	112
Part VI. The Twentieth Century.....	117
Chapter 18. To Westfield.....	118
Chapter 19. To Barrington and Beyond.....	122
Chapter 20. To The Present.....	126
Chapter 21. Aunts, Uncles and Cousins.....	130
Part VII. Appendices.....	143
Appendix A. Ancestor Table.....	144
Appendix B. Bibliography And Other Sources Of Information.....	165

PREFACE

This book traces the ancestry of the children of Grace Eleanor Harkrader and Charles Briggs Hathaway, who were married in 1953 in Westfield, New Jersey. In doing so it also traces parts of the ancestries of many relatives.

Over the years several family members have gathered and recorded information on their various ancestral lines, and this project started out as an attempt to consolidate these into one family history. As is inevitable in genealogy, each known item pointed to several unknowns, and the project grew.

This is, therefore, a genealogy. However, people do not exist in a vacuum. They are the products of the times and places in which they live; and those times and places are in turn shaped by the people who inhabit them. With that thought in mind, considerable emphasis has been placed on the ways in which these ancestors participated in, or were affected by, the events of their times. This is, therefore, also a history of sorts.

The book has been written primarily for the people whose ancestries are described in it. Although copies will be offered to historical societies and libraries whose facilities were used in its preparation, it is not intended as a reference book. There is a bibliography and source list, but there are no footnotes to pinpoint the sources of individual bits of information.

There is very little original material in this book, most of the information having been taken from previously published material. The information herein is, as far as can be determined, accurate; anything which is presented as a fact was presented to the author as a fact and, if it didn't make sense, checked out as thoroughly as practical.

There are only two people in the world who are descended from the entire list of ancestors in this book: Charles B. Hathaway, Jr. and Barbara Kathryn Hathaway. However, the text is organized insofar as possible to isolate the various ancestral lines, thus making it somewhat more relevant for other relatives. Parts I and VI, dealing with the earliest and latest periods, do cover all lines; but Parts II through V cover the Brush-Beebe, McGrew-Harkrader, Bushby-Hathaway and Snow-Briggs lines respectively. Throughout the text the names of ancestors are capitalized.

An effort has been made to present our ancestors just as we found them, without trying to judge them or aggrandize them. The reader is free to select his or her own heroes.

This work is far from complete. There are still several

missing links, and there was always the temptation to delay publication until these were all found. Realistically, however, that will never happen. Some will be found, and additions and corrections are welcome. Should any family member get the urge to dig deeper into this, revise what we have or expand it to "in-law families", this would also be welcomed.

C. B. Hathaway
August 1991.

PART I

The Early Arrivals

Those who came to America before 1640 and helped establish the Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay Colonies. Although these people would be part of different ancestral lines, they shared common experiences at this early stage in our history.

Chapter 1

THE MAYFLOWER PEOPLE

The bride was French, the groom was English and the wedding took place in the Netherlands. This was probably not an unusual occurrence in early 17th century Netherlands, a country which was at that time the temporary home of thousands of foreigners: English troops, French and German religious refugees and university students from all over Europe. This bride was HESTER MAHIEU, one of several daughters of a Walloon family from the area of Lille in northern France. The Walloons, Protestants in a strongly Catholic society, had been forced to take refuge in England or Holland. The Mahieus had evidently gone first to England, as HESTER stated at the time of her marriage that she was from Canterbury. They then moved to Holland and settled at Leiden, about ten miles east of The Hague.

At some point in these migrations HESTER met FRANCIS COOKE, or FRANCOIS as he is called in the Walloon records. There is in fact some question as to whether he was FRANCIS the Englishman or FRANCOIS the Frenchman. There are also varying opinions as to where in England he had come from: Norwich or Blythe, the latter being a town in Nottinghamshire about five miles from Scrooby.

Whatever COOKE's nationality may have been, his occupation was listed as woolcomber, also the trade of some of HESTER's relatives. Whether he met her through his work or picked up a family occupation after marriage is not known; however, Leiden was a textile center with emphasis on woolen goods, so it was undoubtedly a common occupation. The city seal even has a sheep on it.

FRANCIS and HESTER were married at the end of June 1603 in Leiden. About four months later FRANCIS, who is an ancestor in the Hathaway line, was a witness to the baptism of Philippe Delano, son of Jan de Lannoy and Marie (Mahieu) de Lannoy, HESTER's sister. Philippe Delano would be the first of that name to come to America and was the start of a line to the mother of our 32nd president. He would also, as we shall see later, be an ancestor of the Stiles family.

In August of 1606 FRANCIS and HESTER crossed the channel and lived in Norwich for a while. It is probable that their first child, JOHN, was born there; but the family was back in Leiden by 1607 to have JOHN baptized in the Walloon church there. JOHN, therefore was a contemporary of a more famous Leiden native, Rembrandt van Rijn, the painter, who was born there in 1606

Also in 1607 the group of English Puritan Separatists in Scrooby, England, commonly referred to as the Pilgrims,

decided that they could no longer put up with the persecution for their religious beliefs; and they planned a move to Holland. During the next two years they moved, first to Amsterdam and then to Leiden. Rev. Robinson, the leader of this group, had been in Norwich and possibly had met FRANCIS COOKE there. Because of this or for some other reason, the COOKES soon joined Robinson's and Brewster's congregation in Leiden.

* * *

As the Scrooby group was getting settled in Leiden, another band of Englishmen left their homeland for foreign soil. On the 9th of June 1609 a fleet of nine ships under the command of Admiral Sir George Somers left England, bound for the Jamestown settlement in the Virginia Colony. They encountered a violent storm, and the flagship Seaventure was wrecked on a reef at Bermuda. 150 crew and passengers made their way safely to shore. Among these were Rev. Richard Buck, on his way to serve the two year old Jamestown settlement; William Strachey, whose account of this misadventure is our principal source of information; and another individual, described by Strachey as being ultra religious, learned, but defiant of authority - STEPHEN HOPKINS.

On reaching shore, Rev. Buck assembled the survivors and, in the words of Strachey, "led them in thanks to God for their safe deliverance". HOPKINS had a somewhat different reaction to the situation. He, again according to Strachey, tried to convince the others that, "it was no breach of honesty, conscience nor religion to decline from the obedience to the Governor since the authority ceased when the wreck was committed". He didn't convince many people; and he was placed under guard, brought before the company in manacles, and the Governor passed "the sentence of a Martial Court upon him and such as belong to mutiny and rebellion. But so persistent he was and made so much moane....that the whole company besought the Governor and never left him until we had got his pardon".

The survivors built two small ships and, after being marooned for nine months, set sail for Virginia in these craft, appropriately named Patience and Deliverance. HOPKINS went with them, but two of the survivors remained and became the first permanent European settlers of Bermuda. The islands were for a time called the Somers Islands, a rather dubious tribute to the Fleet Commander; and the reef on which the ship had foundered is called Sea Venture Reef. STEPHEN HOPKINS spent about two years in Virginia before returning to England.

* * *

Back in Leiden the English Separatists, or Pilgrims as we shall call them from here on, had the religious freedom they had sought; but there were other problems, and after 11 or 12 years they decided that it was time for another move. Being foreigners, they had troubles fitting into the economy of Leiden and were for the most part stuck with low paying jobs, and there was fear that the war between the Netherlands and Spain might break out again. And William Bradford, on whose writings we depend for most of our information on the Pilgrims, noted, "that which was more lamentable....was that many of their children, by these occasions, and by the great licentiousnes of youth in that countrie, and the manifold temptations of the place, were drawne away by evill examples into extravagante and dangerous courses"

JOHN COOKE was rescued from these manifold temptations and evil examples when his father decided to take him along on the voyage to America, which the Pilgrims had decided would be their destination. HESTER and the other children would remain at Leiden and come over later, as would many other members of the Pilgrim group. Among those remaining in Leiden were the families of EDWARD SOUTHWORTH and Rev. JOHN WING, an Oxford graduate and Puritan minister. These gentlemen, ancestors of the Brush-Beebe line, would both die in Holland; but their widows and children would eventually come over to America. Other Brush-Beebe ancestors remaining temporarily in Leiden were the families of STEPHEN DEANE and STEPHEN TRACY. We know of one Hathaway line ancestor among those staying in Holland - JOHN JENNEY, variously described as a brewer and a cooper, and one of the few people in the English community who spoke Dutch. With those linguistic and thirst-quenching capabilities, he may just have been considered too valuable to let go on what must have seemed to be, and actually was, a risky adventure.

Speaking of adventure, one might well wonder how this group of English people in a foreign country, not in particularly good repute in their homeland, and without much money ever got this expedition organized. The answer lies with a group of London investors, led by a man named Weston and known as The Adventurers, who backed the expedition. The use of this title to describe those who stayed home may be better understood by considering the title of Annie Lash's book Adventurers of Purse and Person (a book about the Virginia Colony). How many of us today would back a bunch of religious radicals on a voyage across the ocean to settle in a virtual wilderness? And how many of us would embark on such a voyage? FRANCIS and JOHN COOKE did.

* * *

FRANCIS and JOHN may have been our only ancestors from Leiden aboard the Mayflower when it sailed from Plymouth,

England in September of 1620; but other ancestors were among the many people who joined the expedition in England. None of these, as far as we know, had any connection with the Separatist congregation. These "Strangers", as Bradford called them, included RICHARD WARREN, a London merchant who was travelling alone, his wife and daughter to follow later. He, like the COOKE's, was in the Hathaway line. Also travelling alone was a Snow-Briggs ancestor named PETER BROWNE, about whom very little is known. And last, but far from least, there was STEPHEN HOPKINS.

Was this the same STEPHEN HOPKINS who had been in Bermuda and Virginia? Although there is no absolute proof of this, there is enough circumstantial evidence supporting this assumption that it is generally accepted by historians. But another question might be why he was going to America again after a less than pleasant first trip. One author has suggested that he was being banished to America as punishment for his involvement in the Bermuda mutiny; but this seems unlikely when we consider the time interval, 11 years, between crime and punishment.

However, his time in Virginia may have been a factor in his signing on with the Pilgrims. Captain John Smith, leader of the Jamestown settlers, claimed that he had offered his services to the Pilgrims but had been turned down because his fee was too high and they could use his charts for nothing. They, of course, obtained Myles Standish as their military leader, and HOPKINS could have been enlisted to help Standish and provide some experience from Virginia. For the Mayflower's destination, and the land for which they had obtained a patent, was the northern part of the Virginia Colony in the vicinity of New York. Whatever HOPKINS' reasons for sailing on the Mayflower may have been, it is obvious that he looked on this as a permanent move. In contrast to COOKE, travelling with his son only, and WARREN and BROWNE, travelling alone, HOPKINS' family group numbered seven people. With him were his son GILES and daughter CONSTANCE, both believed to be by a previous wife; his present wife Elizabeth and their daughter Damaris; and two servants, Edward Doty and Edward Leister. Add to this the fact that Elizabeth was some six or seven months pregnant.

For 64 days from September 6th the Mayflower made its way across the Atlantic with its seasonally worsening weather, a 90 foot ship designed to carry cargo but with 102 passengers crammed below decks. It was in this setting that Elizabeth Hopkins gave birth to a son, appropriately named Oceanus. This event and the rescue of John Howland are a couple of the better known Mayflower legends. Howland fell overboard during a storm but managed to grab a trailing line and was hauled back aboard. John is not an ancestor; but his older brother ARTHUR and younger brother HENRY, both of

whom would come over later, are ancestors in the Hathaway and Beebe lines respectively. Both were Quakers, continually in trouble with the authorities, whereas John proved to be a conservative member of the established church, referred to at the time of his death as a "good old disciple".

Landfall on the 9th of November must have been a welcome sight. However, it was the coast of Cape Cod which they sighted, far to the north of their intended destination. After a futile attempt to round the Monomoy shoals and head toward New York, the ship turned north, rounded the tip of Cape Cod and anchored in Provincetown harbor.

A few of the passengers, realizing that they were well outside the limits of their patent in the Virginia Colony, claimed that they were therefore not under any specific jurisdiction and were free to live as they pleased. Stratton, in his book Plymouth Colony, suggests that HOPKINS was probably one of these, this suggestion obviously being based on STEPHEN's having tried the same maneuver at Bermuda. This is possible, as is the opposite conclusion that STEPHEN was smart enough to realize that it was probably a waste of time. It hadn't worked at Bermuda, and it didn't work at Provincetown, although the solution here was a little different.

To resolve the problem, the leaders drafted what has come to be known as the Mayflower Compact. On 21 November 1620 it was signed by all free adult males and some servants. Just who the signers were must be assumed, as there is no known list; but the signers must have included BROWNE, FRANCIS COOKE, HOPKINS and WARREN. The compact states in part, "We.....the loyall subjects of our dread soveraigne Lord, King James....Haveing undertaken....a voyage to plant the first colonie in the Northerne parts of Virginia, doe....covenant and combine our selves together into a civill body politick for our better ordering and preservation....to enacte, constitute, and frame shuch just and equall lawes...as shall be thought most meete and convenient for the generall good of the Colonie, unto which we promise all due submission and obedience".

-

Chapter 2

PLIMOTH PLANTATION

If you have been to Provincetown and can visualize what it would have looked like without any man-made structures, you can imagine that it may have been a rather inhospitable looking place in the late fall of 1620, even though there were more trees than at present. Also there were problems with water, both fresh and salt. The Pilgrims hadn't found a good source of the former, and the latter was so shallow as to require too much wading ashore in weather which was getting colder by the day.

So, on December 6 a group of 17 men set out in the shallop, a boat which they had somehow managed to carry on board in addition to the passengers and crew; their mission to explore the shores of Cape Cod Bay and find a suitable harbor and place to settle. Included in this crew were William Bradford, newly elected Governor John Carver, Myles Standish, RICHARD WARREN and STEPHEN HOPKINS.

The weather was miserable, and so must have been the 17 men. One narrative of the trip refers to the salt spray freezing on them so that their coats were as stiff as iron. As uncomfortable as it was on the water, some of their more exciting moments came while ashore. They ventured inland on a few occasions to check for water; and HOPKINS, evidently remembering some experiences from Virginia, cautioned the others about Indian deer traps. Bradford, in his account of the trip, admits that he ignored this warning and found himself dangling from a tree.

The second night out, having found no suitable locations so far, they camped near the beach in what is now Eastham. The next morning, as they were preparing to leave and had already carried most of their weapons to the boat, they were attacked by Indians. The two or three men who still had their weapons held off the attackers while the others, dodging arrows, ran back to get theirs and return fire. Despite all the musket and bow-and-arrow activity, nobody on either side was hit; and the Indians retreated, leaving behind only a few arrows for souvenirs. The beach where this occurred is now known as First Encounter Beach, and it is about two miles west of the Salt Pond Visitor Center of the Cape Cod National Seashore. A small monument, just up from the parking lot, lists all the men involved.

HOPKINS, WARREN and the others continued around the shores of Cape Cod Bay, encountering high winds, snow and rain. The mast gave way and the rudder was damaged, so they resorted to rowing. Eventually they found their way into Plymouth, which they soon decided was a suitable location. The question remains as to whether they knew where they were

or thought they were at Salem or Gloucester (English fishermen had cruised this coast for years, so these places were not unknown to them); but, as cold, wet and exhausted as they must have been, it is quite possible that they didn't really care.

The exploration party returned to Provincetown, where HOPKINS was reunited with his family. Bradford, on the other hand, discovered that his wife had drowned in Provincetown harbor while he was away. Whether her death was an accident or suicide is a question which is still open to debate. As we shall see shortly, he would remarry. The Mayflower sailed across the bay, and the settlement at Plymouth was started. Did the Pilgrims actually step ashore onto Plymouth Rock? Let's just say that that rock, or any similar rock onto which one could step directly from a boat, would have been a welcome relief from having to wade across the mud flats.

As might be expected, the first winter at Plymouth took its toll, the effects of the harsh weather being aggravated by a diet totally lacking in fruit and vegetables. Nearly half the settlers died, the fatalities including 15 of the 18 married women as well as HOPKINS' daughter Damaris. The baby Oceanus, although he did not live to adulthood, did survive the first winter. Despite these hardships, when the Mayflower left in the spring none of the Pilgrims elected to return with it. In fact the ship's cooper exercised his option of staying or returning and chose to stay at Plymouth. This young man was John Alden, who as any student of Pilgrim legends knows, married Priscilla Mullins.

It was February before the first Indians came near. Myles Standish and FRANCIS COOKE were out cutting wood when the sighting was reported, and they headed back to the village on the double, leaving their tools behind. The Indians took the tools and left. The next month a lone Indian wandered into the settlement and began to talk to the settlers in English, which it turned out he had learned from some fishermen in Maine. He appeared to be a friendly individual, Samoset was his name, and he was given a cautious invitation to remain overnight. Naturally STEPHEN HOPKINS was assigned to be his host. We may well wonder just where HOPKINS found room for him; but STEPHEN must have been a good host, as this was the start of 54 years of peaceful relations between the Wampanoags and the Plymouth Colony. This initial contact led to a visit by Massasoit, the Wampanoag chief, and the signing of a peace treaty. Later in 1621 STEPHEN HOPKINS and Edward Winslow paid a return visit to Massasoit at his headquarters near present day Bristol, Rhode Island. There is no doubt that STEPHEN HOPKINS played a very important part in the establishment of friendly relations with the Wampanoags, and there can be no doubt that these good relations were essential to the very

survival of the Pilgrims. Winslow wrote, in the fall of 1621, "We set the last spring some twentie Acres of Indian Corne, and sowed some six Acres of Barly and Pease, and according to the manner of the Indians, we manured our ground with Herings or rather Shadds"

In November of 1621 the first ship since the Mayflower arrived at Plymouth, bringing 35 new colonists including Philip Delano, FRANCIS COOKE's nephew. This ship, the Fortune, brought very little in the way of supplies, however, so the net result was 35 more mouths to feed. No more ships arrived until July 1623, when the Anne arrived with RICHARD WARREN's wife and children and HESTER (MAHIEU) COOKE with the rest of the Cooke children. Also aboard was a single man named NICHOLAS SNOW, who soon became the HOPKINS' next door neighbor and eventually married their daughter CONSTANCE.

Among the many others who arrived during those first three years, and thereby qualified as "Old Comers" were several more ancestors who had been in Leiden: STEPHEN DEANE, STEPHEN TRACY, JOHN JENNEY and his family and ALICE SOUTHWORTH. As we noted earlier, ALICE's husband died in Leiden; and we also noted that William Bradford's wife had drowned at Provincetown. We have no indication how well these two might have known each other previously, but about a month after her arrival ALICE married Bradford, who was by this time the Governor of the colony. Five years later ALICE's son CONSTANT came over. This trip cost the Plymouth Company 20 shillings for his passage plus 4 shillings and 8 pence per week for his food. Before we condemn Governor Bradford for using his influence as Governor to bring his new step-son over, we should note that a total of over 500 pounds was spent in bringing 35 friends and relatives of other colonists. CONSTANT would prove to have been a pretty good investment anyway; he served as a representative to the Colonial Court for 22 years and as Colonial Treasurer for 20 years.

The colony grew and, considering its humble beginnings, was doing quite well. Among the many problems to be faced, however, was the deteriorating relationship with the London investors, The Adventurers, who had financed the expedition and the development of the colony. In 1626 a group of the Pilgrims, known henceforth as the Purchasers, agreed to buy out the Adventurers. STEPHEN HOPKINS was one of the Purchasers, as were COOKE, DEANE, JENNEY, SNOW and TRACY, as well as such well known names as Bradford, Brewster, Standish and Alden. RICHARD WARREN was also part of this group, but he died before the agreement was finalized; and, in an unusual action for that time, a law was passed specifically giving his widow ELIZABETH the status of Purchaser.

The settlement at Plymouth as it was in 1627 is re-created in the Plimoth Plantation, well worth the visit if you're in the area. Each of the small houses is manned by a costumed interpreter playing the part of its occupant, and you can meet many of our ancestors. A word of caution, however; they cannot be shaken from their roles, and any attempt to relate them to you or to the present will be fruitless. Also open to the public in Plymouth is the Mayflower II, a reproduction.

-

Chapter 3

INTO BOSTON AND OUT OF BOSTON

In February 1630 ROBERT PARKE wrote the following letter to his friend John Winthrop:

"To the Right Worshipful Maigr. John Winthrop Esquier in Gratton in Suffolke give this with speede I pray you.

"To the Right Worshfull, Sir: - I vnderstand by some of my frendes that you are suddenly to goe into New England. If it be not to laite for me, to provide my selfe with cattell and shiping, I doe porpose to goe with you, and all my company, if please God to permit vs life and health. I have sente to my sonne and to Mathewe Harrison, to go by for me six coues, and three mayers, and a horse; soe I beseech you, giue them directions to take the beste coures for me that you can to furdere my journey. Furder, I woulde desire you to giue me directiones what household I shall take with me, and for howe longe we shalle vittle vs, and what day we shall set forwardes from London; but as for our selves, we will be at Stratford the last weke in February: and thus with my loue and surius remembred, in haiste, I reste, com'ting you vnto the Almightye.

"Your assured frend to commande.

RO: PARKE

"From Easterkeale in Lincolnshire, this xxvijth day of February, 1629". (This would be February 1630 by our calendar).

ROBERT did indeed come to America, bringing with him his son THOMAS and possibly others, although his first wife probably had already passed away. They came on the Arabella, sailing from the Isle of Wight the end of March and arriving at Boston in mid June. There were 76 passengers aboard, and we can only wonder what the ship must have been like if many of those did what ROBERT proposed - bringing 6 cows, 3 mares and a horse.

According to one account, Winthrop's son Henry was out shopping for livestock to take with him on the Arabella but didn't get back to the ship on time and therefore missed the sailing. This may or may not be the reason he wasn't on the ship; but, judging from what else we know of Henry, it seems to fit. Henry had been in Barbados; but, unable to make a go of it as a planter there, he returned to England. Rather than going back to his parents' home, he moved in with his aunt ANN (WINTHROP) FONES and her husband THOMAS, a London apothecary. Also in that household was their daughter ELIZABETH. She and Henry took a liking to each other and, despite being first cousins, were married in 1629 and soon had a daughter Martha.

Although Henry missed the Arabella, he sailed shortly thereafter on the Talbott, arrived at Salem on July 2, 1630, and drowned in Salem harbor the same day. There are several tales of just how this happened, but the important thing from ELIZABETH's point of view was that she was now a widow with an infant daughter. Moving quickly, she booked passage on the Lyon and, six months to the day after Henry's death she arrived in the Massachusetts Bay Colony. Three months after that, in April 1631, she married ROBERT FEAKE.

The Lyon returned to England and made one more trip to Boston that year, arriving in November. Aboard were Governor Winthrop's wife, his son John, Jr., a lady named ELIZABETH WEBB and a man named JOHN SANFORD. SANFORD had been an employee in the Winthrop household in England and had been acting as Winthrop's purchasing agent there for several months. Shortly after their arrival JOHN and ELIZABETH were married. They, like the PARKES, are ancestors in the Briggs line; while ROBERT and ELIZABETH (FONES) FEAKE are in the Brush-Beebe line.

ROBERT and ELIZABETH settled in Watertown, where he owned 200 acres and was twice elected to be a Selectman, and where their daughter ELIZABETH was born. He also was appointed a Lieutenant in the militia under Captain David Patrick and named to a committee to prepare fortifications. FEAKE would eventually prove to be an unstable individual, but he must have been basically capable at the time of these appointments. Nevertheless, having a wife who was both niece and former daughter-in-law of the governor may have helped.

ROBERT's commander in the militia, Captain Patrick, was one of two officers in charge of military affairs in the early days of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. The other was a strong minded, colorful man, a capable and relatively famous leader, and a man whose life would be rather closely intertwined with that of ELIZABETH (FONES) FEAKE. That man was JOHN UNDERHILL.

* * *

The Pilgrims at Leiden were not the only English in Holland in the early 17th century. The JOHN UNDERHILLS, father and son, from Warwickshire were 12 miles from Leiden at The Hague, where the following entry appears in the betrothal records: "John, the son of John Onderhill, cadet in the guard of the Prince of Orange, betrothed 19 November 1628 with Heyltgen, daughter of William de Hooch, young maiden from Gorinchem, both dwelling at the Hague". A later entry stated that the marriage was "solemnized the 12 December 1628 in the Kloosterkerk by minister Ludovicum".

JOHN was evidently in the Netherlands in connection with English efforts to assist the Dutch in their on again -

off again war with Spain, but he didn't remain there long after his marriage. In 1630 he arrived in Boston to join John Winthrop's new colony. In August of that year the Court of Assistants of the colony held its first meeting at Charlestown and provided for housing and maintenance of two ministers. Two weeks later they held their second meeting and provided for military leaders with a resolution stating: "It is ordered that Mr. Patrick and Mr. Underhill shall have allowed them, for half a year's provision, 2 hogsheads of meal, 4 bushels of malt, 10 lb of powder, and lead to make shot; also houseroom provided for them and L15.12 in money to make other provisions. All this to be done at the public charge, their year to begin from the time they begin to keep house".

The phrase "keep house" would seem to indicate that JOHN's "young maiden from Gorinchem" had not yet arrived and that he and Patrick were sharing bachelor quarters. She did arrive sometime during the next five years, and during these years JOHN was busy. He was a Captain in the militia (ranks usually found in the militia were Corporal, Sergeant, Ensign or Lieutenant, and Captain); and by 1634 he was a Selectman of Boston and a Deputy to the General Court of the colony. That same year he was sent by Winthrop to England to obtain more military supplies.

JOHN UNDERHILL returned from England in 1635, by which time several groups from the Massachusetts Bay Colony had moved into Connecticut and established new settlements, sometimes with conflicting claims. Windsor was settled in 1633, Wethersfield in 1634, and Saybrook in 1635 with a patent granting them all the land from Narragansett Bay in Rhode Island to the Pacific Ocean. Then there were the Pequot Indians, who not surprisingly had some problems with all this. In August 1636 JOHN was involved in a skirmish with some Indians on Block Island, and in his account of this he wrote, "Myself received an arrow through my coat sleeves, a second against my helmet in the forehead; so as if God in his providence had not moved the heart of my wife to persuade me to carry it along with me (which I was unwilling to do) I had been slain. Give me leave to observe two things from hence: first when the hour of death is not yet come, you see God useth weak means to keep his purpose unviolated; second, let no man despise advice and counsel of his wife, though she be a woman".

In 1637 he led the Massachusetts Bay contingent of 40 men to aid the Connecticut settlers in their war against the Pequots, who had commenced attacks on many English settlements. UNDERHILL's force joined with Mason's Connecticut troops, surrounding a Pequot stronghold and bringing the war to an end.

Among those earliest Connecticut settlers were several

families in the Brush-Beebe line, including the families of JOHN DRAKE, SIMON HOYT, THOMAS JUDD, MYLES MERWIN and MATTHIAS ST. JOHN. There was also JOHN SHERMAN. JOHN had been born at Dedham, England in 1613 and been educated at Immanuel College, Cambridge. His education must have been directed toward the ministry, but he and his father both had their differences with the Church of England; and at the end of April 1634 they both sailed from Ipswich, England on the Elizabeth. They settled in Watertown, where JOHN preached his first sermon. The following year he left Watertown to form a new church at Wethersfield, Connecticut. He would eventually return to Watertown, and we shall pick up his story there in a later chapter.

Although SHERMAN had had his differences with the Church of England, his preaching evidently was right in line with the doctrines of the Massachusetts Bay Puritan leaders. This was not the case with such people as Roger Williams and Anne Hutchinson, who would be the founders of the two early colonies in Rhode Island, nor with John Wheelwright. And JOHN UNDERHILL, not content with being a successful Indian fighter, managed to get himself into a considerable amount of trouble with the colony's leaders by aligning himself with these renegade religious leaders. It is not clear whether he was defending their views or just their right to express them.

In 1636 Roger Williams had been ordered to return to England; but he ignored the order, and UNDERHILL was sent to apprehend him. By the time JOHN arrived, Williams had escaped, probably much to JOHN's relief. As for Wheelwright, his sermons so angered the authorities that the General Court passed a resolution concluding that Wheelwright was guilty of contempt and sedition. UNDERHILL and others drafted a petition protesting this. Although there were 59 signers of this petition, JOHN's name headed the list, and he seems to have borne the brunt of official retribution for the petition.

In November 1637 UNDERHILL was disenfranchised, and his Captaincy was revoked. Then later that month he suffered the ultimate indignity, receiving the following notice: "By order of the Court, the arms of Captain John Underhill are to be delivered in to Mr. Cane's house at Boston, to wit, guns, pistols, swords, powder, shot, and match, upon pain of ten pounds, after notice left at his house; and he is enjoined not to buy or borrow any of the aforesaid arms under penalty aforesaid until the Court shall take further order, unless he acknowledge he did evil in subscribing the seditious evil".

This one action by the Massachusetts Bay Colony exemplifies the concerns which, 154 years later, would be addressed by the first two amendments to the U. S.

Constitution. UNDERHILL was recognized as a leader, and this is but one instance wherein the establishment found it necessary to take some action to prevent someone from leading in what they considered to be the wrong direction.

JOHN made another trip to England in 1638 and returned the following year. For the next two years he was in and out of trouble with the Massachusetts Bay Colony authorities. For part of this period he was in New Hampshire, where he served as governor of the settlement at Dover for a short time. Governor Winthrop wrote the New Hampshire people to warn them about UNDERHILL, only one of several instances we shall see where the Bay Colony's governor wrote very critical letters about people who had left his jurisdiction. Winthrop once expressed this opinion of democracy: "Democracy is among most civil nations accounted the meanest and worst of all forms of government...and historie record it hath always been of least continuance and fullest of trouble".

JOHN UNDERHILL, of course, was not the only one to get into trouble with this theocratic regime in Boston. Let's consider JOHN COGGESHALL and NICHOLAS EASTON, two Briggs ancestors, who would be among the early settlers in Rhode Island. JOHN and MARY COGGESHALL and their three children arrived in Boston in September 1632 on one of the many trips of the ship Lyon. They lived in Roxbury for a while and then in Boston, where JOHN continued in his business as a textile merchant. He became a Deputy to the Court, but in 1637 he was deprived of his seat on the Court, convicted of disturbing the peace and disenfranchised - all for professing the innocence of Mr. Wheelwright. The COGGESHALLs lived on Washington Street in Boston, next to the home of Anne Hutchinson. JOHN and two others, possibly also neighbors, protested the banishment of Hutchinson, whereupon they too were banished.

In November 1637, at the same time COGGESHALL was being banished, NICHOLAS EASTON was also feeling the wrath of the establishment. Like UNDERHILL, he was warned to give up all weapons and ammunition, this drastic action being necessary in the eyes of the colonial authorities because "opinions of Mr. Wheelwright and Mrs. Hutchinson have seduced and led into dangerous errors many of the people here in New England". EASTON had originally settled in Ipswich, where he and a John Spencer had received permission to build a mill; but for some unknown reason they abandoned the project, and NICHOLAS moved to Newbury. Then, after his ultimatum from the colony, he moved briefly to New Hampshire. In March of 1638 he was "allowed" to depart the Massachusetts Bay Colony, and that year he joined Hutchinson and COGGESHALL in their move to Rhode Island. His departure was accompanied by these words from Governor Winthrop: "one Nicholas Easton, a tanner, a man very bold though ignorant;

that gifts and graces were that anti-Christ mentioned in Thessalonians and that every one of the elect had the Holy Ghost and also the Devil in dwelling".

Another pair of Briggs ancestors who left Boston for Rhode Island were the SCOTTs. RICHARD SCOTT was a shoemaker from London who arrived in Boston in 1634, joined the church there, but then soon moved north to Ipswich. Before the year was over he and a man named Eliot had managed to get themselves lost in the woods, where they wandered around for six days with nothing to eat before being rescued by some friendly, and no doubt amused, Indians. Whether it was this experience or some disputes with the colonial theocracy that caused him to leave is uncertain, but by the middle of 1637 he and his wife were in Providence. She was CATHERINE (MARBURY) SCOTT, sister of Anne (Marbury) Hutchinson, but she and her husband apparently went first to Roger Williams' colony at Providence rather than to Aquidneck Island with her sister's group. Governor Winthrop, ever ready to criticize those who disagreed with or left his domain, had this to say about the SCOTTs: "At Providence things grew still worse, for a sister of Mrs. Hutchinson, the wife of one Scott, being affected with Annabaptistry and going to live at Providence, Mr. Williams was taken (or rather emboldened) by her to make open profession thereof and accordingly was re-baptized by one Holyman, a poor man late of Salem. Then Mr. Williams re-baptized him and some ten more. They also denied the baptism of infants and would have no Magistrates". Thus, although Roger Williams is generally considered to be the founder of the first Baptist church in America, it was actually CATHERINE (MARBURY) SCOTT who led Williams to become a Baptist in the first place. The SCOTTs would later become Quakers, but CATHERINE would eventually sever her connections with the Quakers and presumably go back to being a Baptist.

There were a few Hathaway line ancestors in the early Massachusetts Bay Colony, most of them settling in Essex County north of Boston and staying there. Otherwise, as we have seen and will continue to see, most of our ancestors who came into Winthrop's colony left within a few years for settlements in Connecticut, New York and Rhode Island. And there were even a few who moved down the coast to the Plymouth Colony.

-

Chapter 4

MEANWHILE, BACK AT PLYMOUTH

The town of Sandwich claims to be the first town on Cape Cod. Although it is the first town a traveller from Boston encounters after crossing the Cape Cod Canal, the claim of course is based on its age - settled in 1638, incorporated in 1639. Ironically, although Sandwich was very much within the limits of the large Plymouth Colony and only about 25 miles south of Plymouth itself, it was settled by a group from the Massachusetts Bay Colony, the so-called Ten Men from Saugus.

Their leader was EDMUND FREEMAN from County Sussex in England, who had come over on the Abigail in 1635 and settled north of Boston in a part of the town of Saugus which is now part of the city of Lynn. Early in 1637 he and others moved south into the Plymouth Colony, living for a short while at Duxbury and then receiving permission from the Plymouth Court to settle at Sandwich. Although there had been a few settlers from Plymouth there and many more came in from Saugus, FREEMAN and his nine associates controlled the allotment of land within the town; and there soon were complaints that they had reserved for themselves all the salt marshland (used to graze cattle) which had convenient access to the upland areas.

There appears to be some question as to whether the complaints were based solely on land distribution or partly on the fact that the Ten were not supporting the doctrines of the established church. The Court in September 1639 issued the following order: "Wherein it is very probable that diverse of the Committees of Sandwich have not faithfully discharged that trust placed in them by receiving into the town diverse persons unfit for Church society....and have disposed the greatest part of the land there already to very few that are in Church society or fit for the same...such of the Committee as are herein faulty to appear at the next Court of Assistants to answer the complaints and in the meantime not to dispose of any more lands there....".

Two prominent citizens of the colony, Myles Standish and Governor Thomas Prentice, were assigned to arbitrate this matter. In March 1640 the Court directed that meadow lands be divided "by equal porcions, according to eich mans estate", and the next month a new meadowlands authority was established with EDMUND FREEMAN still a member. There were more disputes, and this time Prentice and John Alden were sent to settle the issue. All this didn't seem to upset FREEMAN very much, as during this time he went back to England for a while, returning with a consignment of hats to sell.

EDMUND FREEMAN became an Assistant to the Governor of the Colony in June of 1640 and was reelected for a total of six terms through 1645. This must have required some working relationship with Prence, who was either Governor or Assistant every year from 1635 to 1672. Not only had the two men had some problems with the meadowlands issue, but Prence was one of the colony's strongest anti-Quaker voices, while FREEMAN openly favored more liberal treatment of the Quakers. Whatever differences Prence and FREEMAN may have had, they must have had to resolve them on at least two occasions, as two of EDMUND's sons married Prence's daughters.

His oldest son, EDMUND, JR., became involved with both sides of this Quaker controversy. After the death of his first wife, Rebecca (Prence), he married MARGARET PERRY, who, as best we can tell, was the sister of EDWARD PERRY, lifelong clerk of the Sandwich Quaker meetings. EDWARD had the dubious honor of being the town's leading payer of fines levied for being a Quaker. EDWARD's son SAMUEL would move to Rhode Island and be a part of the Briggs line, while EDMUND, JR.'s daughter RACHEL would marry her next door neighbor, JOHN LANDERS and in turn have a daughter who would marry a Hathaway.

The Brush-Beebe line was also represented in early Sandwich. Earlier we mentioned Rev. JOHN WING, who was with the Pilgrims at Leiden. He died there in 1630, and two years later his widow came to America with four children and her father. After a short stay in Saugus, the family moved to Sandwich; and her son JOHN married ELIZABETH DILLINGHAM, daughter of another of the original Ten Men of Saugus who had founded Sandwich. They would move eastward to Barnstable and Yarmouth.

* * *

1634 was a big year in the life of JOHN COOKE. Possibly not as exciting as 1620 when, at the age of 13 or 14, he had crossed the Atlantic with his father; but nevertheless a big year. First, he was made a freeman. Freeman, originally the 41 signers of the Mayflower Compact, were, in subsequent years, those men over 21, of good reputation, recommended by their neighbors, and admitted by a formal court. Second, an examination of the tax lists for 1633 and 1634 would seem to indicate that in the latter year JOHN's father FRANCIS had given him about half his property. Third, in 1634 JOHN married SARAH WARREN, daughter of fellow Mayflower passenger RICHARD WARREN.

JOHN was active in the civil affairs of the Plymouth Colony, which was beginning to expand. He was also for many years a Deacon in the Plymouth Church, but it is here that he ran afoul of the establishment; he became a Baptist and was excommunicated from the church at Plymouth.

There are several unsubstantiated stories about how this came about, and the exact dates are not known; but apparently he was influenced by a Baptist congregation in Barnstable - one which, by some accounts, he had been sent to investigate. Nathaniel Morton, historian of the Plymouth Church, who had written some highly favorable comments about JOHN's father-in-law RICHARD WARREN on the occasion of that man's death, had somewhat less favorable things to say about JOHN. He wrote in part, "...one of the Church of Plymouth whoe was formerly a deacon therof; fell into the error of Anabaptistry and falling in with some of those that Carried on that Scismaticall division; att length was Called in question by the Church; and Continewing in his obstanacie and sequestration from the Church Comunion att times of sollemne worshipp was alsoe Cast out of the Church and soe remaineth untill this day. This John Cooke although a Shallow man became a Cause of trouble and desension in our Church and Gave just occation of their Casting of him out".

Thinking back to the fate of religious dissenters in John Winthrop's Massachusetts Bay Colony, one might think, "Here we go again". However, as dictatorial as the Plymouth Church may have been, its authority did not extend to civil affairs; Plymouth Colony was governed by laws. Therefore, although JOHN had been rather rudely banished from the church, he continued to be a respected citizen of the colony.

He was frequently involved in the purchase of land from the Indians. These purchases were made from Massasoit, the Wampanoag chief whom HOPKINS had visited at Bristol, or later from his son Metacom, or King Philip as he has more often been called. (There are indications that King Philip may actually have been the grandson, rather than son, of Massasoit). The Plymouth Colony took pride in the fact that they paid the Indians for all the land; they did not just take it. However, since Indians had no experience with the concept of owning land, it is doubtful that they really appreciated what they were giving up when they sold it. We have all heard of the Dutch buying Manhattan Island for \$24; well, consider this: JOHN COOKE and four others purchased some 200 square miles from Massasoit for 30 yards of cloth, 15 axes, 15 hoes, 15 pair of breeches, 8 pairs of shoes and stockings, one cloak, 8 blankets, 8 moose skins, two pounds of wampum, one iron pot and ten shillings' worth of miscellaneous goods.

The entire Plymouth Colony, as opposed to the small settlement at what is now the town of Plymouth, consisted of everything southeast of a line from Cohasset, Massachusetts to the head of Narragansett Bay in Rhode Island. That is all of the present Barnstable, Bristol and Plymouth Counties in Massachusetts; and, in Rhode Island, Bristol County plus

the towns of Tiverton and Little Compton. In 1640 the Colony established three reserved tracts of land to be given to the Old Comers, those who had come over by 1623. One of these was at the elbow of Cape Cod around present day Orleans, one in the Dartmouth area on Buzzards Bay, and one around Seekonk, Massachusetts. JOHN COOKE would be one of the founders of the settlement at Dartmouth, which would become the home of the Hathaways.

* * *

Two of our Old Comer ancestors were operators of grist mills at Plymouth. In 1633 STEPHEN DEANE was given permission to build a grist mill with monopoly rights if he could handle all the colony's needs, but on condition that he charge no more than one pottle (half gallon) out of every bushel of ground grain. Perhaps he couldn't handle all the colony's needs and lost his monopoly, or perhaps he sold the mill; but by 1638 JOHN JENNEY was also operating a mill at Plymouth. JENNEY died about five years after that, and his wife continued to operate the mill. A re-creation of JENNEY's mill is open to the public at Plymouth. Both the DEANES and JENNEYS had daughters who would be among the early settlers of the Old Comer reserved tracts, SUSANNAH (DEANE) SNOW at Orleans and SARAH (JENNEY) POPE at Dartmouth.

* * *

And what was happening to STEPHEN HOPKINS, he of Bermuda, Virginia and First Encounter Beach, and the host to the first Indian visitors? As might be expected, he was an active member of the colony, serving two years as a tax assessor and another two as Assistant to the Governor. The name of STEPHEN HOPKINS also shows up several times in the records of court proceedings in the colony, with varying degrees of involvement. His two servants, Doty and Leister, fought the only duel in the history of the colony, both surviving to be punished by the court. Another of his servants, a single woman named Dorothy Temple, was discovered to be pregnant; and she claimed that the father was one Arthur Peach. Peach, however, was not available to marry Dorothy, having in the meantime been executed for the murder of an Indian. The court ordered, "in regard to her covenant of indenture shee hath yet above two yeares to serve him, that the said Mr. Hopkins shall keepe her and her child, or provide shee may be kept with food and rayment during the said terme; and if he refuse so to doe, that then the collony provide for her, & Mr. Hopkins to pay it". Evidently STEPHEN didn't think much of this ides, for later that same day the court ordered, "Mr. Stephen Hopkins is committed to ward for his contempt to the Court, and shall so remayne comitted until hee shall either receive his servant Dorothy Temple or els provide for her elsewhere at

his owne charge during the terme shee hath yet to serve him". Four days later the records show that STEPHEN had concluded a deal with a John Holmes to take responsibility for Dorothy for a fee.

It was not just his servants who got HOPKINS into court; he made it on his own a few times. In 1636 he was convicted of battery against a John Tisdale and fined five pounds. This was while he was serving as an Assistant, and the Court commented that he should have been setting a better example. The law applied to everyone in the Plymouth Colony.

In 1637 he was accused of letting men drink in his house on Sunday before services ended, and in 1638 he was fined for "suffering servants and others to sit drinking in his house and to play at shovel board". We should not assume from these last two offenses that he was just a friendly and hospitable man; it is more likely that he was operating the colony's first tavern, for he was later fined for selling beer for two pence a quart "that was not worth a penny" and for selling wine at excessive prices. He was also fined once for selling a mirror at an excessive price.

Despite these relatively minor run-ins with the law, HOPKINS must have been considered on balance to be a positive influence on the colony and its people. In 1642 a man named Jonathan Hatch, who was a real problem in the community, was ordered to dwell with HOPKINS, "and the said Mr. Hopkins to have a speciall care of him".

STEPHEN HOPKINS died in the summer of 1644 at the age of 59 or 60. However, that same year saw the start of new settlements in the Plymouth Colony, settlements in which his descendants would play important parts.

-

PART II

Three Routes to Danbury

The Beebe line: the ancestry of Nellie Virginia Brush and George Havermeyer Beebe, who were married in 1892 at Bethel, Connecticut and were the parents of Grace Benedict (Beebe) Stiles and Kathryn (Beebe) Harkrader. These ancestors came from Cape Cod, from Long Island and Westchester County and from all over Connecticut to settle in Danbury, Connecticut, the nearby towns of Bethel and Ridgefield, and adjacent parts of New York State.

Chapter 5

THE CAPE CODDERS

NICHOLAS SNOW's home at Plymouth was between those of STEPHEN HOPKINS and Edward Bangs, and he apparently got along well with his neighbors. He had married STEPHEN's daughter CONSTANCE in 1627; and in 1644 they joined Bangs and several other families in settling Nauset, one of the three tracts reserved for Old Comers. This settlement, not far from the beach where HOPKINS and others had exchanged near misses with the Indians 24 years earlier, became the town of Eastham in 1654 and included also the present day towns of Orleans and Wellfleet.

About this time the Plymouth Court passed a law requiring that "every town shall have a clerk or someone appointed to keep a register of the day and year of the marriage, birth and burial of every man, woman and child within the township". SNOW had this position in Eastham from 1646 to 1663, and it is thanks to the good records kept by him and people like him that we know much of what appears on these pages. NICHOLAS also held the positions of Selectman for five years, Representative to the Old Colony Court for three years, Constable and Collector of Excise for one year each, and Surveyor of Highways for at least three years. This last title is still used in much of New England to describe the position of Highway Superintendent, who may or may not actually be a surveyor. He had held that same position back in Plymouth and had once been reprimanded for "not mending the highway".

SNOW's son STEPHEN, probably named for his maternal grandfather, married widow SUSANNA (DEANE) Rogers, daughter of STEPHEN DEANE, the Plymouth miller. STEPHEN SNOW and his son MICAJAH both lived on a farm in what is now East Orleans and both served as Selectmen in Eastham. However, MICAJAH was also a seaman and was at one time captain of a ship engaged in trade with Barbados. The name Snow is still very much in evidence in the Eastham - Orleans area. Much of the information we have on the Snow family was obtained in the Snow Library in Orleans, which is a couple of blocks down the street from Snow's Hardware.

Within a few years after NICHOLAS and his associates settled Eastham they were joined by others from the Plymouth - Duxbury area. One of these was Mayflower passenger GILES HOPKINS, NICHOLAS SNOW's brother-in-law. Another was WILLIAM MYRICK, or MERRICK as it is also spelled, one of four brothers who had come to America in the 1630's. Probably a servant when he came over, MYRICK had lived near Boston for a while and then come south to Duxbury and married REBECCA TRACY. He became active in the militia, being referred to as Sergeant in 1649 and as Lieutenant in

the Eastham Militia in 1663. On the 23rd of May in 1667 two of MYRICK's children married two of GILES HOPKINS' children: WILLIAM MYRICK II to ABIGAIL HOPKINS and STEPHEN HOPKINS II to MARY MYRICK. This double wedding is one of the reasons that tracing NELLIE BRUSH's ancestry back to STEPHEN HOPKINS gets a little confusing.

There were other additions to the Eastham settlement, people with a Harvard College connection.

* * *

In 1636 the General Court of the Massachusetts Bay Colony appropriated 400 pounds to establish a "schoole or colledge" at Newtown, just across the Charles River from Boston. A year later an Englishman named John Harvard, with two degrees from Cambridge University, came to America and settled in nearby Charlestown. On his death he left half his fortune and his 400 volume library to the college. In recognition of this, the college was named for this benefactor and the town renamed for his alma mater.

Another Cambridge University alumnus, Rev. JOHN SHERMAN, having served the new churches at Wethersfield and Milford, Connecticut, returned to Watertown in 1647. In addition to his ministerial duties there, he became a fellow of Harvard College, lecturing there for 30 years on mathematics and astronomy. Cotton Mather called him "witty and yet wise and grave, carrying a majesty in his very countenance".

JOHN SHERMAN's place in our ancestry is through his daughter MARY, who married HENRY FREEMAN (no apparent relation to the founder of Sandwich); their son SAMUEL, who moved south into the Plymouth Colony and married MERCY SOUTHWORTH, daughter of the Colonial treasurer; and their daughter ALICE, who married NATHANIEL MYRICK, offspring of one half of that 1667 Hopkins - Myrick double wedding.

JOHN SHERMAN's tombstone in East Watertown is inscribed in Latin, the translation of the inscription being: "Sacred to the memory of John Sherman, a man distinguished for his piety, character and truth; a profound theologian; as a preacher a veritable Chrysostom; unsurpassed in his knowledge of the liberal arts, particularly mathematics; a faithful pastor of the church of Watertown; an Overseer and Fellow of Harvard College. After a life of faithful service to Christ in the church for upward of 45 years in the fullness of time he passed away and received from Christ the palm of victory. In the 72nd year of his age, August 8, A.D. 1685".

Among the students at Harvard while JOHN SHERMAN was lecturing there was a young man named THOMAS CROSBY; and,

considering the relatively small student body at the time, it is logical to assume that CROSBY was exposed to SHERMAN's teaching. THOMAS had come to America in 1635 on one of the three trips the ship Susan and Ellen made to the colonies that year. He was undoubtedly totally unaware of where he was going, however; as he was at the time only two months old. He was, of course, with his mother and father, SIMON CROSBY, referred to in most Crosby family histories as Simon the Emigrant.

The Crosbys settled in Newtown, where in 1636 SIMON became a Selectman, being "chosen by townsmen to order the town Affayres for this year following". Three years later, however, he passed away, leaving his wife, sons THOMAS and Joseph, and his parents who had followed him to America. The family property must have included farmland, for we note that when THOMAS entered Harvard he paid part of his tuition in grain and livestock. In 1653, at the age of 18, THOMAS graduated from Harvard in a class of eight men. Whatever his original plans for a career may have been, he accepted a call to conduct church services for the congregation at Eastham. Although never ordained, he served the Eastham congregation for 17 years at a salary of 50 pounds a year.

Eastham was well served by our ancestors: NICHOLAS SNOW, and later his sons and grandsons, in a variety of local government positions; WILLIAM MYRICK in charge of the militia; and THOMAS CROSBY in the pulpit.

By 1670 THOMAS and SARAH CROSBY had four children, and he may have found it difficult to support this family on his pastoral salary. For that or for some other reason the family moved a short distance to the west to Harwich, where they had eight more children, including triplets born in 1678. THOMAS became a merchant, but we do not know in what goods he was dealing. His business did, however, require trips to Boston; and on one such trip in 1702, he died unexpectedly.

The Crosbys are the anchor of the Cape Cod portion of our Brush-Beebe ancestry; the Snows, Myricks, Hopkins and other families joined the Crosby line; and the Crosbys in turn spread out in many directions. In addition to the Crosby ancestors we'll be meeting shortly, the many descendants of THOMAS CROSBY include Enoch Crosby, Revolutionary War hero and believed to be the inspiration for James Fennimore Cooper's novel The Spy; Frances Jane "Fanny" Crosby, the blind poet and hymn writer; and Harry Lillis Crosby, better known as Bing.

* * *

Most of the above information on EDWARD STURGIS was obtained from books in the genealogical section of the Sturgis Library in Barnstable. Our descent from EDWARD is through his daughter HANNAH and the Gray family to the Fosters, whom we shall meet later.

Moving eastward from Sandwich was JOHN WING, son of the Puritan minister who had died in Holland. JOHN and his wife ELIZABETH (DILLINGHAM) built a home first in Yarmouth; and then, about 1675, moved farther out on the Cape. He started construction of a house on a high piece of land surrounded by marsh in what is now Brewster. Court records show that the Indians complained that he had unjustly obtained the land, but he apparently settled the matter with a payment to the Indians. This land is now known as Wing Island and is accessible via the John Wing Trail at the Cape Cod Museum of Natural History. A plaque on a rock just off the trail is inscribed, "...In 1676 near this spot he erected the first house and became the first white settler within the limits of Old Harwich. Here he died in 1699. He owned land across the Cape from sea to sea." It would be interesting to know just what constituted being "the first white settler within the limits of Old Harwich", inasmuch as THOMAS CROSBY and others from Eastham were in some part of Harwich about six years before WING built his house

JOHN's great granddaughter, PHEBE WING, married NATHANIEL FOSTER in Brewster/Harwich in 1746. We have previously noted that a great granddaughter of EDWARD STURGIS also married a Foster; so who were the Fosters?

There are at least two families of Fosters in our background; and this one goes back to THOMAS FOSTER, who arrived in America in 1634. He lived in Weymouth for a while, later in Billerica, and he owned some land in Salem. He evidently was active in the militia, being referred to as Sergeant and also, without any further explanation, as the "gunner of the castle". In 1675, at the age of 75, he was in court for not attending regular church services and for associating with Anabaptists; and he was fined five pounds and costs. THOMAS moved south to Marshfield, just north of Duxbury, with his son JOHN. JOHN, a blacksmith by trade, had somewhat better relations with the church and became a deacon in the church at Marshfield.

Also moving south to Marshfield and later to Sandwich was a man named THOMAS CHILLINGSWORTH. We know little about THOMAS except that he had been fined in Lynn for letting his pig run loose, that he became a shoemaker in Marshfield, and that he had four daughters and no sons. Despite this absence of sons, the name Chillingsworth does appear once in the Cape Cod telephone directory. THOMAS' daughter MARY married JOHN FOSTER, and they named one of their ten children CHILLINGSWORTH. Today the Chillingsworth

Restaurant, which its operators say is named for CHILLINGSWORTH FOSTER, is located at the corner of Route 6A and Foster Road in Brewster. It was CHILLINGSWORTH FOSTER's son NATHANIEL who married PHEBE WING.

In the 1740's and 1750's several families from the Harwich/Brewster area moved westward to a section of New York just west of present day Danbury, Connecticut and settled in an area known as the Philips Patent. This was part of the extensive land holdings of Frederick Philipse, who died in 1702 and left to his son Adolph much land in Westchester County and all of present day Putnam County. We shall see later that the early settlers of this area included several of our ancestors from nearby parts of New York and Connecticut, which is easier to understand than why the Cape Codders moved out there. But move they did, families named Crosby, Doane, Foster, Sears, Snow and others. They settled in that part of present day Putnam County which was then the southeast corner of Dutchess County, and the village was therefore called Southeast. It is near the present towns of Brewster and Carmel.

DAVID and RELIANCE (HOPKINS) CROSBY, their son ABNER, and at least three of their other children made the move in 1749. DAVID's brother Joshua, married to RELIANCE's sister Lydia, made the move that same year; and a few years later they were joined by his other brother Thomas, who was married to Elizabeth Hopkins, a cousin to RELIANCE and Lydia. It was Thomas who was the father of Enoch Crosby, "The Spy". In 1750 NATHANIEL and PHEBE (WING) FOSTER also moved to Southeast, and in 1765 their daughter RUTH married ABNER CROSBY.

Ten years later saw the start of the Revolutionary War. DAVID CROSBY served in the 3rd Regiment of the Dutchess County Militia, commanded by Colonel John Field. His son ABNER also served in this regiment in Captain Joseph Dychman's Company; and there are records showing that NATHANIEL FOSTER also served under Colonel Field. ABNER CROSBY and NATHANIEL FOSTER have been accepted as qualifying ancestors by the D.A.R.

NATHANIEL FOSTER died in 1787, and his will was the first will recorded in the Dutchess County Surrogate's office. DAVID CROSBY died in 1793 and is buried in the Sears Burying Ground in Southeast with a stone calling him David (The Elder) Crosby. His son ABNER is also buried there.

Among the 10 or 11 children of ABNER and RUTH was THOMAS, who, in 1786, married HANNAH SNOW, a fifth generation descendant of NICHOLAS and CONSTANCE (HOPKINS) SNOW. Their daughter FANNY would marry FLOYD BRUSH and become the grandmother of NELLIE VIRGINIA BRUSH.

Chapter 6

BY WAY OF NEW NETHERLAND

Captain JOHN UNDERHILL - with British forces in The Netherlands, where he married a Dutch lady; with Governor John Winthrop's settlement at Boston, where he established and led the militia; then disenfranchised by Winthrop for his support of radical religious leaders such as Williams, Wheelwright and Hutchinson. Sometime between 1639 and 1641 he apparently decided that he had had enough of the Bay Colony, and he left. He had requested and received permission from the Dutch at New Netherland to move to that colony; but, instead of going there, he settled in Stamford, an English settlement but not far from the Dutch.

In 1640 a group from Wethersfield, Connecticut, tired of disputes with the Hartford and Windsor settlements, was looking for a new home. The New Haven Colony had purchased land west of Norwalk and offered it to the Wethersfield people. There were 30 purchasers, and they agreed to pay New Haven 33 pounds for the land; and in 1641 28 of them moved in and founded the town of Stamford. They invited JOHN UNDERHILL to join them and granted him eight acres of land. His home was apparently also a garrison or fort, and all citizens except him were charged a fee to support it.

Just west of Stamford, the town of Greenwich was founded in 1640 by a group which included Captain Daniel Patrick and ROBERT FEAKE, two of UNDERHILL's militia associates from Boston. This was in a disputed area, the Dutch claiming all land east to the Connecticut River; and in 1642 the Greenwich inhabitants took an oath of allegiance to the Dutch.

ROBERT FEAKE had evidently become mentally unstable by this time, and the Dutch officials considered him to be unfit to enter into any agreement. The title to his land was transferred to his wife ELIZABETH, and the agreement said in part, "Whereas Elizabeth Feake, duly authorized by her husband, Robert Feake, now sick....". ELIZABETH was not having much luck with her husbands.

The Dutch may have claimed the Greenwich area, but they weren't having much success controlling it. Between 1642 and 1644 there was a buildup of friction between Indians and Greenwich settlers, due in part to harassing tactics of the Dutch director Kieft; and by 1644 the Indians were on the warpath. JOHN UNDERHILL volunteered his services to the Dutch Governor, and he was authorized to organize a force to retaliate. This force of 130 Dutch and English under Captain UNDERHILL and Ensign Van Dyck landed at Greenwich and marched on the Indian encampment. The Indians lost over 500 men in the ensuing fight, and they asked UNDERHILL to

sue for peace on their behalf. A peace treaty was signed in April 1644.

In appreciation for his services, UNDERHILL was given land on Manhattan Island at the site of the present Trinity Churchyard, and he moved there in May 1644. Although he and some friends got into a brawl at the City Tavern, 73 Pearl Street, there was no punishment; and his reputation in New Amsterdam remained good enough for him to be elected to the Council in May. Four years later Governor Stuyvesant appointed JOHN to be the first schout, or sheriff, of Flushing; so he sold his Trinity Churchyard property for the equivalent of \$80 and moved to Flushing. His first official act as sheriff was one which seems a little out of character for a man who had once risked banishment for defending radical preachers. He locked the doors of the church because the new preacher, Rev. Francis Doughty, was preaching "against the present rulers, who were his masters".

That one incident should not be construed as indicating that JOHN UNDERHILL had permanently sold out to the establishment. With the conflicting claims on the southern Connecticut area, it was inevitable that there would be trouble between the Dutch and the English; and in 1653 UNDERHILL learned of a reported Dutch attempt to mobilize the Indians against the English. He advised the New Haven Colony what he had heard and then protested strongly to the Dutch governor. The Dutch arrested him, and he was taken to New Amsterdam under guard. The charges were dismissed, and he returned to Flushing, where he then made a speech critical of the Dutch. For this he was charged with treason and banished. He then went to Rhode Island where, on 19 May 1653, the General Assembly commissioned him and Captain William Dyre to seize Dutch facilities. The following day JOHN wrote a letter urging the impeachment of Governor Stuyvesant and including a list of grievances which sounded much like the Declaration of Independence which would be written 123 years later. One week after that he seized a Dutch fort in Connecticut. The following year a tentative peace was established, and JOHN UNDERHILL moved to Southold on the north shore of eastern Long Island

Southold, which became part of the New Haven Colony in 1643, was founded by a group including JOHN CONCKLYN from Salem, Massachusetts; THOMAS BRUSH, who married CONCKLYN's daughter REBECCA; and THOMAS BENEDICT. BENEDICT (or BENNYDICK as he signed it) was a weaver's apprentice from Nottinghamshire who came to America in 1638 at the age of 21. On the ship with him was a lady named MARY BRIDGUM, variously described as his sister-in-law and as his step-sister. Whatever she had been, she eventually became his wife and joined him in his moves to various parts of the colonies.

The BENEDICTS settled in an area known then as Hashamommock on the east side of a creek which was soon to be named for him: first, Thomas Benedict's Creek; later, Thomas' Creek; then Tom's Creek; and eventually Mill Creek. In 1650 THOMAS was one of four men appointed by the United Colonies of New England to investigate complaints filed by Uncas, leader of the Mohicans, alleging mistreatment by Long Island tribes

* * *

Sometime between 1644 and 1647 ROBERT FEAKE had gone back to England, leaving ELIZABETH and her three daughters in Greenwich. Before leaving he had asked his friend William Hallett to care for his family and property in his absence. Hallett did a thorough job; by April of 1648 ELIZABETH was pregnant and claimed that she was Hallett's wife. Although Dutch records referred to ROBERT as her former husband, suggesting she was divorced, Connecticut authorities evidently had no evidence of divorce and remarriage; and in 1649 a warrant was issued for the arrest of William and ELIZABETH. We don't know just what resulted from this; but the Governor of Connecticut at the time was John Winthrop, Jr., son of the Massachusetts Bay leader and brother of ELIZABETH's first husband; and he referred to her as Mrs. Hallett, so we assume everything was straightened out. ROBERT FEAKE returned to America and died at Watertown in 1661, having been insane during the last years of his life.

In 1648 Martha Winthrop, ELIZABETH's daughter by her first husband, married THOMAS LYON. He and his brothers Henry and Richard were all early settlers in the Connecticut - New York - New Jersey area. THOMAS was in Fairfield in the New Haven Colony and then moved to Byram Point near Port Chester and Greenwich. Byram, Connecticut is today part of the town of Greenwich, the Byram River is part of the Connecticut - New York border, and Byram Point is the southernmost point in New England. Martha died after bearing one child, and THOMAS then married MARY HOYT, who was probably the sister of a couple of other Hoyts whom we shall meet shortly.

ELIZABETH and William Hallett sold their Greenwich land rights to JEFFREY FERRIS in 1650, and it would appear that they then moved across to Long Island or at least had close ties there. For, in 1656 Hannah Feake, one of ELIZABETH's daughters by her second husband, was married in Flushing to JOHN BOWNE. JOHN UNDERHILL came in from Southold to attend this wedding; and, in a letter to John Winthrop, Jr., he described BOWNE as "a verri gentiele young man, of good abiliti, of louli fetture and gud behafior". As we shall see shortly, Hannah got JOHN BOWNE into a pile of trouble.

Heyltgen Underhill, JOHN's Dutch wife, died at Southold about 1658, and a year after her death JOHN married ELIZABETH (FONES) Winthrop FEAKE Hallett's other daughter, ELIZABETH. She was about 30 years younger than JOHN but probably had known him for a long time, the families having been together in Boston and in the Stamford - Greenwich area. JOHN and Heyltgen had had three children; and, although JOHN was in his late sixties when he married ELIZABETH, they had five more, including NATHANIEL who was born in 1667.

ELIZABETH (FONES), the London apothecary's daughter, had had an interesting life. Her first husband was her cousin, Henry Winthrop; and he drowned a year after their wedding. Her second husband, ROBERT FEAKE, went crazy; and she was arrested for allegedly living with her third husband before being married to him. Three of her daughters married our ancestors, but two of them were the wrong wife. Martha and Hannah both died early in their married lives, and our descent from their husbands is through the second wives. Only daughter ELIZABETH connects us to her.

* * *

In the latter part of the 1650's both THOMAS BENEDICT and THOMAS BRUSH moved westward on Long Island to Huntington, and in 1658 BENEDICT was a representative to present that town's petition to be included in the New Haven Colony. BRUSH went back to Southold and then returned to Huntington in 1663, at a time when the Dutch again controlled parts of Long Island. That year BENEDICT is reported to have been appointed a magistrate by Governor Stuyvesant, although he also reportedly remained loyal to the British. In 1664, having moved to Jamaica in what is now part of Queens, he was appointed a judge; and, after the Dutch had surrendered to the British, he was appointed by British Governor Nichols to be Lieutenant of "the Foot Company of Jamaica". Shortly thereafter, for reasons which aren't clear, he and his entire family moved across Long Island Sound to Norwalk, Connecticut. There he continued his active involvement in community affairs, serving as town clerk and selectman for many years. We'll pick up the story of the Benedict family again in the next chapter.

THOMAS BRUSH returned again to Huntington about 1664, and soon thereafter a RICHARD BRUSH showed up there. These two men owned adjoining lots at Huntington at one time, and some 90 years later a great great grandson of RICHARD would marry a great great granddaughter of THOMAS. These are about the only proven relationships between these two men, although it is quite likely that they were related in some way.

The earliest known whereabouts of RICHARD was in

Cambridge in 1658. There have been speculations that he may have been a servant to a Mr. Joseph Cooke of that town and that he was a seaman, but these things are not known. As of the first of 1668 he owned five acres in Huntington, and four years later he became part owner of Farm No. 7 in an area known as the Ten Farms of Huntington. He was married to JOANNA SAMMIS, and they had seven children, all born in Huntington.

As we have noted, Governor Peter Stuyvesant surrendered New Amsterdam to the English in 1664, marking the end of New Netherland and the Dutch colonial era in America; and many English families on eastern Long Island felt free to move back closer to New York. JOHN UNDERHILL, who had been banished by the Dutch in 1653, was among these, moving first to Setauket, then to Oyster Bay. In 1665 the English governor appointed him Surveyor of Customs for Long Island, and he also served as High Constable and Under Sheriff.

Earlier we mentioned that when JOHN UNDERHILL had been sheriff of Flushing in 1648 he had closed the church of a Rev. Francis Doughty. Well, shortly after the English took over in 1664, Rev. Doughty's son Elias arrived on the scene and sued Captain JOHN UNDERHILL, a John Hicks, and Captain WILLIAM LAWRENCE, a former magistrate of Flushing, for one year's back salary due his father. There ensued a frantic search for the contract between the town and Rev. Doughty, but it was nowhere to be found. Eventually Captain LAWRENCE's wife, ELIZABETH (SMITH) LAWRENCE, confessed that she had put it under a pie in the oven. We are free to draw our own conclusions as to why she did this and as to the disposition of Elias Doughty's suit.

This contract baking lady was the daughter of RICHARD SMITH, better known as "BULL" SMITH, who first shows up in the records as one of the early settlers of Southampton, where he was one of the townsmen designated to cut up whales which had been cast up on the beach. About 1656 he went to England and returned on a ship with a lot of Quakers, including a man named Christopher Holder, about whom we shall hear more in a later chapter. This group must have converted him to their beliefs, or at least the Boston authorities thought he was one of them; and the whole lot were thrown in jail in Boston. Then, when he returned to Southampton, that town banished him.

SMITH then went north and west on Long Island to the area around Stony Brook and Setauket. There he bought land from Lyon Gardner; but, because of conflicting claims resulting from the area having been under both Dutch and English rule, it took 12 years for him to settle all claims and get clear title. Eventually he did get it all settled, and RICHARD SMITH has been referred to as "Richard Smith, Esq., the wealthy patentee of Smithtown, Long Island".

Where did the name "Bull" come from? There is a legend to the effect that the local Indians were going to give, or possibly sell, him some land; and they told him he could have all the land he could ride around in one day. Whether the means of transport was specified in the deal or he just chose it, RICHARD made the ride on a bull and claimed all the encircled property. True or not, it's a harmless story.

On his death, "BULL" SMITH left some "land and meadow at a place called Sunck Meadow" to his daughter ELIZABETH. This is probably the present site of Sunken Meadow State Park on the west side of Smithtown Bay. When she inherited this land, ELIZABETH (SMITH) was on her third husband, one Colonel Townley. The second one, who had died a year after their marriage, had been Philip Carteret, the first English governor of New Jersey. She had married him about one year after the death of her first, Captain WILLIAM LAWRENCE, Captain JOHN UNDERHILL's co-defendant in Elias Doughty's suit.

"BULL" SMITH was not the only Long Island ancestor to receive land from the Indians, nor was he the only one to get in trouble for being a Quaker. JOHN UNDERHILL had settled at Oyster Bay, a few miles west of Smithtown. The Mattinecock Indians, for whom part of Oyster Bay was named, believed that the English had taken some of their land without compensation; and they approached UNDERHILL with their problem. Although he had spent much of his life fighting Indians, they recognized his ability to get things done. He presented a petition on their behalf to the governor; and, to show their appreciation, the Indians gave JOHN 150 acres in Locust Valley, between Glen Cove and Oyster Bay. JOHN UNDERHILL died 21 July 1672 and is buried in the Underhill Burying Ground, located on part of this 150 acre tract.

Much has been written about JOHN UNDERHILL, and it is reasonable to suspect that some facts of his life may have been flavored with fiction. Be that as it may, it is hard to ignore a man who in the 17th century made five trips across the Atlantic, served in the military in England and Holland and for at least three colonial governments in America, was banished by both English and Dutch colonial governors, led at least three campaigns against Indians, and held a wide variety of civil posts: governor in New Hampshire; selectman in Massachusetts; sheriff, magistrate, constable and customs officer in New York. Add to that the fact that he had one Dutch wife, one English wife and eight children; and you could say that he had led a full life.

As for the other individual who was in trouble for Quaker beliefs, it was the man whom UNDERHILL had described as "a verri gentiele young man", JOHN BOWNE. Born in Matlock, Derbyshire, JOHN had come to America with his

father and sister about 1649 when he was 22. After a short stay in Boston, the family moved to Flushing, where JOHN did two things which would lead to a few unpleasant years. First, in 1656 he married Hannah Feake. Second, in 1661, he built a house, a house which is still there, about a mile and a quarter northeast of Shea Stadium.

Hannah joined the Society of Friends, or Quakers, something which was no more acceptable in Dutch New Netherland than it had been in Boston. So, being outcasts, the Quakers conducted their meetings in the woods; and one day JOHN attended one of these meetings, presumably to find out what his wife was up to. Evidently sympathetic to their situation, he invited them to have meetings in his new house. This led to complaints, and on the first of November 1662 he was arrested. Two weeks later he was tried and convicted of violating the law by worshipping outside the state church. After successive periods of bread and water in the dungeon, imprisonment at the Stadthaus, and three days parole at home, he was shipped as a prisoner to the Netherlands. After refusing to sign a document prepared by the Dutch and after protesting to the authorities in Holland, he was released and finally got back to Flushing in January of 1664.

Not only was JOHN released, but the directors of the Dutch West India Company wrote a stern letter to Governor Stuyvesant, saying in part, "...although it is our cordial desire that similar and other sectarians might not be found there, yet as the contrary seems to be the case, we doubt very much if rigorous proceedings against them ought not to be discontinued except you intend to check and destroy your population, which, however, in the youth of your existence, ought rather to be encouraged by all possible means. Wherefore it is our opinion that some connivance would be useful that the consciences of men, at least, ought ever to remain free and unshackled. Let every one be unmolested as long as he is modest, as long as his conduct in a political sense is unimpeachable, as long as he does not disturb others or oppose the government...". Although it doesn't seem so today, that statement was probably considered very liberal at the time. Since it came during the last year of the Dutch colony, however, its effect on future policy is questionable.

In 1672, George Fox, founder of the Society of Friends in England, visited Flushing and was a guest of the BOWNEs in their home. He wrote in his journal about "a very large meeting, many hundreds of people being there; some of whom came about thirty miles to it". Three years later Hannah (Feake) Bowne made one or two trips to England and Ireland, and JOHN is believed to have joined her for at least one of these journeys. Hannah died in London in 1678. JOHN returned to Flushing, and Quaker meetings continued at his home until 1695, when the Flushing Meeting House was built.

The Bowne House is located at 37-01 Bowne Street, Flushing, Queens, two blocks south of Northern Boulevard. If planning to visit it, one should check first with the Bowne House Historical Society to confirm the hours during which it is open to the public.

In 1679 JOHN BOWNE remarried, to a lady named HANNAH BICKERSTAFF. All in all JOHN had 16 children: 8 by the first Hannah, 6 by the second, and two by a third wife, Mary. He really wanted a son named John; he and the first Hannah named their first born John, but he evidently died at a young age, for the first son born to the second HANNAH was also named John. That John also died young, and three years later they had the third JOHN. He would marry ELIZABETH LAWRENCE, "BULL" SMITH's great granddaughter in 1714; and they would have a daughter ANN, who would marry into the Underhill family

NATHANIEL UNDERHILL, Captain JOHN's son, received 40 acres at Oyster Bay from the local Indians, apparently in appreciation of favors they had received from his father. Then in 1685 he went over to the mainland and purchased some land described as being near the bridge of Westchester upon "ffrog's neck". Allowing for the spelling idiosyncrasies of the day and the fact that the present day Bronx was then part of Westchester, this land was probably on Throg's Neck. Also, in or about 1685, he married MARY FERRIS, granddaughter of the JEFFREY FERRIS who in 1650 had bought land rights in Greenwich from NATHANIEL's grandmother.

Their son, NATHANIEL, JR., was listed as the treasurer and a trustee of St. Peter's Episcopal Church in Westchester in 1729. He was also a slave owner, his will including a bequest of three Negro slaves to his son Israel. Another of his sons was the JOHN UNDERHILL who married ANN BOWNE.

* * *

Josiah Foote had an iron manufacturing business in England and had established a branch in Boston. About 1652 he came to Boston, bringing with him an apprentice named HENRY FOWLER; and they settled for a short while in Roxbury. In early 1654 they moved to Providence, and the next year HENRY married REBECCA NEWELL. Through haste or ignorance or some other cause, however, he had neglected to obtain a marriage license, for which indiscretion he was fined. However, the fine was remitted, and HENRY received only a rebuke from Roger Williams.

Also in 1655 HENRY's patron, Josiah Foote, died unexpectedly. HENRY was one of the executors of the estate, and he must also have been mentioned prominently in the will, as he eventually took over Foote's business. He

remained in Providence until about 1665, when he moved to Newport, where he became a Deputy to the General Assembly.

Eventually the FOWLERS moved westward to Westchester County, New York, and HENRY owned a saw mill near the Sheldrake and Mamaroneck Rivers. This would be in the present day Larchmont - New Rochelle area. He also was one of the original purchasers of land in Eastchester, although this was probably given to his son, as there is no indication that he ever moved there. HENRY died in Mamaroneck in 1687, whereupon his son HENRY assumed the name of HENRY, Senior and continued to invest heavily in Eastchester real estate. Another son, WILLIAM, was a major owner of Harrison's Purchase, between Rye and White Plains. We mention both these sons because some 80 years later descendants of these two brothers would marry. And their sister, GRACE (FOWLER) HUNT, would be NATHANIEL UNDERHILL, JR.'s mother-in-law.

The younger HENRY, the self-styled HENRY, SR., married a girl named ABIGAIL HOYT, daughter of a colorful character named MOSES. MOSES HOYT's parents, SIMON and SUSANNA, moved around a lot, so it is difficult to say exactly where he was born. As best we can tell, the elder HOYTs were among the first settlers of the Massachusetts Bay Colony and lived at Salem, Charlestown, Dorchester and Scituate before moving to Windsor, Connecticut and then to Stamford. In 1665 MOSES moved a little farther to the west to Eastchester, where he took on such municipal functions as marking highways and tending to fences.

MOSES had his own ideas about paying clergymen. In 1671 it was "voated that wheras Moses Hoitt being defective & being behind & not seeming to be willing to contrebute unto our minister wherupon the inhabitants of Eastchestre have agreed that the said Moses shall be presente unto the next court of Sessions". Later we find this record: "This 9th of July 1672 where as the Inhabitants of Eastchester having stood ofended with Moses Hoitte he having this day acknowledge his ofence the court have excepted of his acknowledgement & past by his offense". Presumably all that meant that he had apologized and was forgiven, but there may be other interpretations. A year and a half later, in February of 1674 he protested against a vote to raise money to pay Philip Pinknie and said that he would not pay anything. Assuming that Pinknie was also a minister, it appears that MOSES hadn't softened much on that issue. However, by 1685 either his attitude or the minister had changed, as MOSES contributed one pound toward support of the minister, the second largest contribution in town.

Or this apparent change of heart may actually have been the result of having more money. He operated an inn for a while; in 1679 and again in 1682 "Moses Hoitte is chosen to

keep ordinary & entertain strangers for the year". In 1683 he was on a committee to discuss land matters with the Indians, and he later became a town commissioner. We should also note that he owned a least one slave, there being a record showing that in 1672 he sold a 30 year old Negro woman.

MOSES HOYT had an older brother WALTER, whom we shall meet in the next chapter; and we suspect, but do not know for sure, that the MARY HOYT who married THOMAS LYON of Byram was his sister. To further confuse this relationship we should point out that the granddaughter of THOMAS and MARY, ELIZABETH LYON, married JOHN FOWLER, MOSES HOYT's grandson.

The Fowler family, as well as the Hoyt family, produced some confusing relationships. JOHN and ELIZABETH (LYON) FOWLER had a son, Dr. HENRY FOWLER, who married HANNAH FOWLER, both of them descended from the first HENRY, who had come over from England with Mr. Foote.

In 1807 Dr. HENRY's son BARNABAS married a lady named SARAH ANN ODELL. She was descended from WILLIAM ODELL, who had lived in Concord, Massachusetts as early as 1639 and then moved to Fairfield, Connecticut, and whose son WILLIAM, JR., had been a proprietor at Rye in 1662, The several generations of Odells between WILLIAM and SARAH ANN had married members of the Dychman, Vermilyea and Vowles families.

SARAH ANN's grandfather, ABRAHAM ODELL, was the subject of a Westchester County legend of the Revolutionaary War. According to Bolton's History, ABRAHAM's house was invaded one day by a band of Loyalists, who apparently had two motives. After locking all the female members of the household in the cellar, they proceeded to interrogate ABRAHAM to find out where he kept his money and presumably also to obtain information about the activities of his son, General Jacob Odell. Receiving no information at all from ODELL, they hanged him from a tree. Then, cutting him down, still alive, they interrogated him some more, with the same negative results. So, he was hanged again from the tree. Some of the women had, by this time, worked their way out of the cellar, and ABRAHAM was again cut down. His wife, REBECCA (DYCHMAN), attacked the invaders, who hit her with their rifle butts, breaking some ribs. The Loyalists, evidently convinced that this was a lost cause, left; and ABRAHAM lived until 1819, when he died at the age of 94.

The Odells were well represented in the Colonial forces during the Revolution. We have mentioned ABRAHAM's son Jacob, who rose to the rank of General in the Continental Army. ABRAHAM himself served in the 3rd Regiment of Westchester County Miltia, as did another son JONATHAN, who

was also in the 6th Dutchess County Regiment. JONATHAN, who was SARAH ANN's father, was married to ELIZABETH BOWNE UNDERHILL, great great granddaughter of Captain JOHN UNDERHILL and great granddaughter of JOHN BOWNE.

* * *

There were, as we mentioned earlier, two Brush lines on Long Island, probably related but with no proven relationship. From RICHARD BRUSH we have descent through ROBERT, JONATHAN, and JOSHUA to PHILIP, born in 1767. From THOMAS we have descent through another THOMAS and two JACOBS to RUTH, born in 1766. PHILIP and RUTH, probably distant cousins, married in 1786, bringing the two lines together. Unfortunately we don't know very much about any of these Brushes except the second JACOB, RUTH's father.

JACOB BRUSH was a man of many talents and many experiences. A cordwainer (leather worker or shoemaker) by trade, he also built and operated a samp mill in Huntington. (Samp is Indian corn). And during the Revolution he became involved in a variety of events on both sides.

On June 10, 1776, 3½ weeks before the signing of the Declaration of Independence, JACOB submitted a bill to the Provincial Congress for five pounds, reimbursement for three trips. The first item was for a trip to New York to bring in a Tory named Philip Young, who was accused of counterfeiting bills of credit, and against whom JACOB had previously testified. The second item was for a trip to Fire Island, purpose not stated; and the third was for carting the baggage of Captain John Wicke's company of Colonel Josiah Smith's regiment.

The western part of Long Island had been under both English and Dutch jurisdiction during the 1640's, 50's and 60's; and little more than a hundred years later the area was once again disputed territory. During the Revolution it was controlled by British forces for a while, and there were undoubtedly many Loyalists on the island.

When the British forces took Long Island, JACOB remained in Huntington and took the oath of loyalty to the crown along with 499 other people. He was assigned to a British militia company and sent out to build Fort Franklin at Lloyd's Neck. At the end of the war he filed a claim against the British for 100 pounds for boarding British troops and carting supplies. Whether he ever collected on this is unknown, but doubtful.

A contemporary of JACOB, JOSEPH IRELAND was also caught up in the confusion surrounding the British occupation of Long Island. JOSEPH was the great grandson of THOMAS IRELAND, one of the proprietors of the town of Hempstead.

THOMAS had three daughters and only one son. When he died about 1668 he left 10 pounds to one daughter, 20 pounds to a second daughter and a cow to the third; but the house and lands, left to his widow during her lifetime, were then to go to the only son, THOMAS, JR. During the next few years THOMAS, JR. was twice authorized by the town of Hempstead to draw lots for land, and he received over 100 more acres. Then in 1688 he exchanged much of this land with a Benjamin Burtsall for the latter's 49 acres at Cold Spring near Oyster Bay. He later bought 30 more acres at Oyster Bay.

How much more land the Irelands acquired in the Oyster Bay area is not definitely known, but in 1748 we find THOMAS, JR.'s grandson JOSEPH selling his Oyster Bay farm for 300 pounds but retaining four square rods for a family burial ground. After selling his Oyster Bay property, JOSEPH bought 177 acres in Huntington. He was a millwright but also did some farming on this acreage. At one point his property included 7 cows, 7 cattle, 26 sheep, 5 swine; and, also listed as property, one slave.

JOSEPH IRELAND served in the Suffolk County Militia under Captain Josiah Smith, and it is evidently this service which has been accepted as qualifying his descendants for membership in the D.A.R. However, he eventually got caught up in the British occupation; and in 1778 he, like JACOB BRUSH and 488 other inhabitants of Huntington, took an oath of "peaceable behavior and allegiance" to His Majesty George III. He also later submitted a bill to the British for supplies.

JOSEPH IRELAND's daughter MARGARET married JOSHUA BRUSH, and they were the parents of the PHILIP BRUSH who married his distant cousin RUTH, JACOB's daughter. JACOB's wife, SARAH (PLATT), had died in 1677, 20 months after RUTH was born; and in 1788 JACOB moved, probably with RUTH and PHILIP, to Southeast, New York, new home of the Cape Cod Crosbys.

This has been a relatively long chapter, one which has touched on many families; and a brief summary of a few of these family relationships seems in order. We had FONES to FEAKE to UNDERHILL; then SMITH to LAWRENCE to BOWNE, BOWNE to UNDERHILL, and UNDERHILL to ODELL. There were also HOYT and LYON to FOWLER and then ODELL to FOWLER. And finally we looked at IRELAND to BRUSH.

Having now placed the PHILIP BRUSH and THOMAS CROSBY families in Southeast, we find birth records showing that PHILIP's son FLOYD was born in Ridgefield, Connecticut and THOMAS' daughter FANNY was born in Danbury. These places were all within 10 or 15 miles of each other, borders were not very exact, and the people did move about. The borders didn't bother FLOYD and FANNY, who were married in 1827.

And what about the Fowlers whom we have been following in this chapter? Their line terminates in a marriage into the Keeler family and a resulting daughter who marries one of the children of FLOYD and FANNY. We'll meet the Keelers in the next chapter.

-

Chapter 7

THE CONNECTICUT YANKEES

The rich soil of the Connecticut River Valley attracted several groups of settlers from the Massachusetts Bay Colony: people from Dorchester who founded Windsor in 1633, a group from Watertown who settled at Wethersfield the following year, and Thomas Hooker's people from the Cambridge area who founded Hartford in 1636.

Among the Windsor settlers was JOSEPH LOOMIS, who got about as close to the fertile bottom land of the valley as he could; his house was on a tract called The Island because that is what it became when the Connecticut flooded. Other Dorchester people who came to Windsor included MILES MERWIN, MATTHIAS ST. JOHN, WALTER HOYT and JOHN DRAKE. There was also THOMAS DIBBLE, who had come over from Dorchester, England with his brother Robert but had settled originally at Nantasket on the south side of the entrance to Boston Harbor.

Stiles' History of Ancient Windsor says that JOHN DRAKE was "not a man of sufficient distinction to entitle him to the appellation of Mr." We don't know enough about JOHN's life to refute or confirm this appraisal, the only significant information we have on him being an account of his death in the records of the town of Windsor, to wit: "Aug 17, 1659. John Drake Senr dyed accidentally as was Driving a Cart, Loaded with corn, to carry from his house to his son Jacob's the Cattle being 2 oxen and his mare, in the high way against John Griffin's Something Scar'd the Cattle, and they Set a runing, and he labouring to Stop them, by takeing hold on the mare, was thrown down on his face, and the Cart wheels went over him; broke one of his legs and bruised his body, so that he was taken up Dead, being carried into his Daughters house and Life come again, but Dyed in a Short time and was buried on the 18th day of August '59."

The Drake family stayed in Windsor for some years. In 1667 JOHN's grandson, also named JOHN, received a grant of land at Simsbury, about ten miles west of Windsor; and the following year he built a house and barn there near the site of the Congregational Church.

Of the other Windsor settlers, MERWIN moved on to Milford, HOYT to Norwalk, and ST. JOHN the short distance to Wethersfield. We may recall that both Milford and Wethersfield were towns in which Rev. JOHN SHERMAN had helped to establish churches before returning to Watertown and Harvard. He had probably left Wethersfield before MATTHIAS ST. JOHN arrived and therefore lost the opportunity to keep MATTHIAS out of trouble. MATTHIAS was in court in 1651 for failing to pay a 14 shilling debt, and in 1654 because he

allegedly "had sold syder to Indians by which they was Drunke". It's doubtful that these problems with the law would have been enough to make him leave town; but he did, moving that same year to Norwalk. He stayed in Norwalk until 1669, when he died; and we note that in his will he signed his last name SENSION.

Thomas Hooker was one of several Puritan clergymen in the Boston area who had serious disagreements with the established church there; and, like some of the others, he left, taking most of his congregation with him, and started a settlement at Hartford. Among the members of his Cambridge congregation who accompanied him to Hartford in 1636 was THOMAS JUDD, the first of seven generations of Judds in our ancestry. Also in Hartford during its early days were THOMAS and ELIZABETH (FULLER) UPSON, who may or may not have been members of Hooker's church. In 1638 UPSON was "censured and fined for unseasonable and immoderate drinking", and two years later his wife was sentenced to be "severely corrected for an offense against morality". The Upsons and Judds would both move out to the west of Hartford in a few years, and we'll pick up that story later.

Other early settlers at Hartford included TIMOTHY STANLEY, whose daughter married ST. JOHN's son MARK; and RALPH KEELER, who had a lot not far from the present State Capitol. He was listed as a "chimney viewer", but that may have been a town position that he held, as he seems to have been a builder by trade. In 1652 he and WALTER HOYT of Windsor moved to Norwalk, on Long Island Sound just northeast of Stamford. The next year HOYT and KEELER agreed with the town to take on the job of building a house for Mr. Hanford, the minister. Two years later HOYT was designated to drive the cows to the pasture and directed to build "a good and sufficient gate" leading to the pasture.

Nine or ten years later KEELER sold his own home at Norwalk to RICHARD RAYMOND, a former Salem fisherman who was now engaged in coastal trade with the Dutch at New Amsterdam. KEELER then moved across the Sound to Jamaica, where he agreed with the town to build a meeting house 26 feet square. Two years later, however, he was back in Norwalk, and RAYMOND moved to Saybrook. At about this same time THOMAS BENEDICT and his family also moved from Jamaica to Norwalk.

* * *

Something happened to JOHN BEEBE during his voyage from England to America in the spring of 1650. Whether he was injured or became seriously ill we do not know; but he realized that he was about to die and so wrote his will at sea, signed it on the 18th of May and died shortly thereafter. JOHN was travelling with five of his seven children,

his wife having died and his two older sons having come over earlier. (These two, John and Samuel, would be among the founders of New London, Connecticut). JOHN realized that his will must make some provisions for the care of his youngest children: Nathaniel, Mary and JAMES - or, as he spelled it, JEAMES.

He appointed his friends William Lewis and John Cole to be overseers; and Lewis apprenticed JAMES to Thomas Stanley, to work for Stanley until he reached age 25. JAMES accompanied Stanley to Hadley, Massachusetts, a town along the Connecticut River which today sits between two fine women's colleges, Smith and Mount Holyoke, from which at least three descendants of JAMES would someday graduate. Stanley left five pounds to JAMES in his will, and JAMES remained in Hadley for some time after his period of obligated service ended. Massachusetts had a bounty on wolves at the time, and we find JAMES BEEBE's name on the list of Hadley's leading wolf killers during the years 1668 to 1672.

In 1668 he had married Mary Boltwood, and they had three children before she died in 1676. Sometime during the next three years JAMES moved to Connecticut, first to Stratford and then to Norwalk, where he married SARAH BENEDICT in December of 1679. SARAH had been born in Southold on Long Island, a town which had, as we saw in Chapter 6, been founded by a group which included her father.

In 1684 eight Norwalk families moved north to settle the new town of Danbury. THOMAS BENEDICT had been one of the four men appointed by the Connecticut General Court to plan the settlement; but when the time came to move he did not go, remaining in Norwalk until his death in 1690. Nevertheless, the settlement of Danbury was very much a Benedict affair. Among the eight families were: JAMES and SARAH (GREGORY) BENEDICT, son and daughter-in-law of THOMAS; Samuel Benedict, also a son of THOMAS; JAMES and SARAH (BENEDICT) BEEBE, son-in-law and daughter of THOMAS; and the Gregory family, probably JAMES BENEDICT's in-laws.

The other families making up the eight founding families of Danbury were: JOHN and MARY (LINDALL) HOYT, son and daughter-in-law of WALTER; the Taylor family, probably the ancestors of the LYDIA TAYLOR who would marry JAMES BEEBE's grandson; the Bushnell family; and THOMAS BARNUM and family. 105 years later a fifth generation descendant of THOMAS, NAOMI BARNUM, would marry into the Beebe family; and 82 years after that another descendant, Phineas Taylor Barnum, would organize "The Greatest Show on Earth".

The first Danbury settlers lived at what is now the lower end of Main Street, with Samuel Benedict's house being positioned for optimum defense against Indian attacks. Not

surprisingly in this new and small community, JAMES BEEBE held several important positions in Danbury. He was a Deputy to the Connecticut General Assembly in 1710; and he was also a deacon in the church, the Justice of the Peace and a Captain in the militia. For one who had become an orphan at the age of 9 in the middle of the Atlantic Ocean, JAMES BEEBE had done quite well.

His son JAMES succeeded him in his duties as deacon, Captain and Justice of the Peace. This JAMES had married, in 1708, ABIGAIL SHERMAN, whose grandfather SAMUEL was the brother of Rev. JOHN SHERMAN, the preacher and Harvard lecturer.

* * *

Back in Norwalk, RALPH KEELER passed away sometime around 1673. Shortly thereafter his son SAMUEL joined the Connecticut forces participating in King Philip's War. This conflict, about which we shall hear much more in later chapters, was fought mostly in Massachusetts; but there was a threat to Connecticut. In December of 1675 he took part in the Great Swamp Fight near Kingston, Rhode Island. This was the first significant victory for the colonists over the Indians, and for his participation SAMUEL was awarded 12 acres of land. In March 1681 SAMUEL married SARAH ST,JOHN, granddaughter of MATTHIAS.

In 1694, ten years after the Benedict group left Norwalk to settle Danbury, SAMUEL KEELER and his brother Ralph were among another group of ten Norwalk residents who petitioned the Connecticut General Assembly "to purchase of the Indians a certain tract of land being about 14 miles northward of the town of Norwalk to settle a plantation there". The Assembly, after taking ten years to consider the matter, granted approval and decreed that the new settlement should be called Ridgefield. The land was purchased in September 1708 from Catonah, sachem of the Ramapos, for one hundred pounds. The original recipients of lots at Ridgefield included the names of Keeler, St.John, Rockwell, Caulfield, Hickok, Hoyt and Benedict. In 1713 they called the Rev. Thomas Hawley to be their pastor.

This land was right on the New York border, and in 1731 Connecticut ceded some 60,000 acres of it to New York. This land, sometimes referred to as the "Oblong" patent, included land belonging to JONAH KEELER, SAMUEL's son, and SOLOMON CLOSE, whose daughter DEBORAH would marry JONAH's son MATTHEW. Because of this transfer of land between states we find that the histories of North Salem, New York and Ridgefield list some of the same people as founders.

While the Keelers may have owned land on the New York side, most of them evidently lived on the Connecticut side.

JONAH and his wife, the former RUTH SMITH, built the "Pink House", still standing in Ridgebury in the northern part of Ridgefield Township. The name Keeler is still very much in evidence in Ridgefield. In 1769 Timothy Keeler, a cousin, bought a house from David Hoyt for 145 pounds and turned it into a combination inn, post office, blacksmith shop, general store and community center. It was a prominent stop on the New York to Boston stage route. This building, called the Keeler Tavern, is still standing and is a museum.

* * *

The original Danbury settlers were soon joined by other families, families from all over Connecticut who moved into Danbury itself or into nearby towns such as Newtown and Brookfield. These included the Andrus, Dibble, Fairchild, Hickok, Judd, Kimberly, Knapp, Porter and Starr families.

THOMAS UPSON left Hartford, possibly to avoid future scrapes with the law, and became one of 84 original settlers of Tunxis, or Farmington, about 10 miles west of Hartford. The JUDDs also moved to Farmington from Hartford; and among the other original settlers were ROBERT PORTER, WILLIAM HICKOK, JOHN ANDRUS and JOHN's son ABRAHAM. UPSON's daughter HANNAH married SAMUEL HICKOK, who was either the son or grandson of WILLIAM.

In 1673 ABRAHAM ANDRUS was one of a group from Farmington which petitioned the General Court to establish a similar plantation at Mattatuck, about 15 miles to the southwest. The petition was approved, and the next year 32 proprietors established what is now the city of Waterbury. Each of the proprietors was to get an eight acre house lot plus meadowlands proportional to his estate (presumably the amount he had invested). The list of these 32 includes the names of ABRAHAM ANDRUS (80 pounds), SAMUEL HICKOK (85 pounds) and THOMAS JUDD, SENR, for his son (80 pounds). ROBERT PORTER and PHILIP JUDD, son of THOMAS, were also early settlers, although their names are not on the list of the 32 proprietors.

The agreement establishing the settlement stated that each person taking allotment shall, within four years (from 6-6-1674), build a "good substantial dwelling house, at least 18 foote long and 16 foote wide, and nine foote between joints". Also everyone taking allotment "shall personally take up his residence at Mattatuck in his own house within the term of four years". These requirements were evidently intended to assure that the land was in the hands of real settlers and not land speculators.

ABRAHAM ANDRUS, a cooper by trade, had a house lot at what is now the corner of Main and Bank Streets near the center of Waterbury. He married SARAH PORTER about 1682;

she was a member of the church in Farmington and had at least three of their children baptized there, indicating that Waterbury may not yet have had a church.

JOHN ANDRUS died in 1681; his will left his wife the "dwelling house, and the seller under....use of half my orchard....my feather bed". ABRAHAM was to receive "...my old mare and her suckling colt, and my 20 acre lot in the great swamp adjoining his own lot". Later ABRAHAM was also a beneficiary of his mother's will, which left him "...one sheet, one napkin, and one pillow bear, one glass bottle". Did this meager inheritance from his mother and the swampland from his father indicate that his parents didn't have much faith in his ability to take care of things? Possibly - when ABRAHAM himself died at the age of only 45 his estate was so much in debt that some real estate had to be sold. His wife SARAH was appointed administrator; but she was expecting, so settlement was delayed until she delivered their son Robert. Then the probate court at Hartford ordered the sale of some property which ABRAHAM had bought but not paid for. It was bought back by SARAH's brother, from whom it had been purchased in the first place.

ABRAHAM's widow, SARAH, married JAMES BENEDICT of Danbury, whose first wife, SARAH (GREGORY), had passed away. Her daughter, MARY ANDRUS, then married her new step-brother, JAMES BENEDICT, JR., who had been the first English child born in Danbury.

PHILIP JUDD had married HANNAH LOOMIS, granddaughter of JOSEPH LOOMIS of "The Island" at Windsor; and she also was left with some debts when PHILIP died at the age of only 40. We don't know what happened to her then, but by 1720 all their children had moved another 20 miles or so westward to Danbury. Another Waterbury native, SAMUEL HICKOK's son EBENEZER, also moved to Danbury.

* * *

MILES MERWIN, one of the early residents of Windsor, had moved from there to Milford. That town was part of the New Haven Colony, founded in 1638 by Rev. John Davenport and a company of reputedly affluent Puritans from Boston. This colony grew to include not only New Haven and Milford, but also such places as Guilford, Stamford and even Southold on Long Island, the town founded by THOMAS BRUSH and THOMAS BENEDICT.

Among the signers of the "Fundamental Agreement" of the new colony at New Haven was THOMAS KIMBERLY. THOMAS came from an English town with the quaint name of Wooten-sub-Edge in Gloucester County, and he first shows in colonial records in Dorchester, just before coming to New Haven. He was a tailor by trade, a literate man, and a member of Daven-

port's church. He served the colony as constable for one year, clerk of a military company and as Corporal of the New Haven Train Band (a militia company in training, not a railroad musical group). He was also a marshall of the New Haven Colony throughout its existence.

His son ABRAHAM, for reasons not known, went south to the Albemarle Sound area of North Carolina, where his name shows up in a 1670 court record in Edenton, being sworn in to appraise a boat. It appears that THOMAS didn't approve of this move, as he left ABRAHAM's share of his estate to ABRAHAM's wife HANNAH.

Their son, also named ABRAHAM, was born in North Carolina but returned to Connecticut and became a blacksmith. He was in Stratford from 1701 to 1710, when he became one of the founders of the town of Newtown, located between Waterbury and Danbury. His granddaughter SARAH would marry into the Fairchild family, which would later join the Beebe line.

* * *

1759 - in that year a British force under General James Wolfe defeated the French under Montcalm on the Plains of Abraham near Quebec, thus ending, for all practical purposes, French control of Canada. And in 1759, in Newport, Rhode Island, the cornerstone was laid for the first Jewish synagogue in the colonies. Also in 1759 there occurred another event, of somewhat less significance historically but of considerable importance to the people involved and to our story.

In April of that year five men living in the southeast part of Danbury signed a petition requesting the Connecticut General Assembly to divide the Danbury Congregational parish and authorize the establishment of a new church, or "ecclesiastical society" in that part of town now known as Bethel. In most of colonial New England the government controlled the churches, and parishes and towns were nearly synonymous.

These five men - LEMUEL BEEBE, EBENEZER HICKOK, Isaac Hoyt, PHINEAS JUDD and Thomas Starr - were not challenging this state control. Their petition stated that, living four miles from the Danbury church, it was difficult to make the trip each week with their families; and frequently the church was so crowded that they and their children had to stand throughout the service.

As best we can tell, only BEEBE and HICKOK made the trip to Hartford to present the petition, travelling a route which today is U.S 6 and/or I-84 through Newtown and Waterbury to the capital. They presented their petition in April and returned to Danbury; and it was October before the

Assembly approved it, stating in part, "...according to certain limits and bounds set forth in the Memorial of Ebenezer Hickok and Lemuel Beebe and others...it is therefore resolved that the memorialists and all others living in the south part and southward of the following bounds.. shall be and they are hereby made into a Distinct Ecclesiastical Society which shall be called and known by the name of Bethel"

The first meeting of the new society was held on November 12, 1759 at the home of Isaac Hoyt (later commonly known as the Treat Solley homestead). Capt. John Benedict was chosen moderator and LEMUEL BEEBE clerk. Capt. John Benedict, Capt. EBENEZER HICKOK, Lieut. JOHN DIBBLE, Ensign BENJAMIN BENEDICT and Ensign Thomas Starr were elected to "a committee for soxiety for year ensuing". Four days later they had another meeting, this one at the home of PHINEAS JUDD, at which it was voted to impose a tax of "a penny on a pound", with EBENEZER HICKOK and JOSEPH STARR to be the tax collectors.

Captain EBENEZER HICKOK donated the land for the church, and the basic building was ready by the summer of 1760. (It was 1796, however, before pews, pulpit and other interior furnishings were all complete.) In November 1760 the new church was formally established with Mr. Noah Wetmore ordained as pastor. There were 71 members, including four Beebes, 14 Benedicts and eight Judds.

The original meeting house was replaced in 1842 by a new building. It in turn was replaced in 1865 by the present church, all three buildings being on the same property, the land given by EBENEZER HICKOK. EBENEZER is buried in the small cemetery next to the church; the inscription on his tombstone reads in part, "...for many years a deacon in the church of Bethel, a principal pillar in that church and society and an ornament to the Christian religion". (HICKOK's granddaughter would marry into the Benedict family). The Bethel Congregational Church, for 100 years the church home of our Beebes and Benedicts, is today an active vibrant church. Should you care to visit it, it is about one block off the main street in the center of Bethel.

* * *

MILES MERWIN's grandson THOMAS moved slightly westward from Milford, purchasing several large parcels of land in what was then called Greenfield, probably what is now the Greenfield Hill section of Fairfield, between Weston and Bridgeport. He purchased more than land. In 1765 in Norwalk his daughter married JOSIAH RAYMOND, a farmer and great-great grandson of RICHARD RAYMOND. As a dowry she brought with her 15 slaves from Greenfield. We have seen

previous instances in New York and Connecticut of a person owning one or two slaves, but 15 as a dowry would seem to indicate that the New England economy was much more dependent on slave labor than we had imagined.

* * *

The "shot heard 'round the world", the Battle at Concord Bridge on April 19, 1775, wasn't much of a battle in reality; but it united the colonists. In Danbury Noble Benedict quickly organized a company of 98 men, the first man to join being Enoch Crosby. Others included Daniel Heacock, Thomas Judd, DRAKE HOIT, Henry Knapp, Jabez Starr and Joshua Taylor. This company became the 6th Company of the 5th Continental Regiment. JUSTUS HOYT, son of DRAKE, also served in this company, being discharged in September 1776. (DRAKE HOYT, incidentally, got his name from his mother. She was HANNAH DRAKE, daughter of JOHN DRAKE of Simsbury and great granddaughter of the JOHN DRAKE who had been run over by his own wagon.)

Immediately following the Battles of Concord and Lexington, the colonial forces attempted to bottle up the British in Boston. Participating in this siege of Boston was Private DANIEL JUDD in the 5th Company of Colonel Wooster's 1st Regiment. This group later marched to Harlem and served on Long Island. DANIEL was in this company from May 6 to December 2 of 1775, drawing Private's pay of two pounds per month. He later was a Sergeant on the staff of the 3rd Regiment.

Nearby in Ridgefield we find MATTHEW KEELER's name among those who voted at a December 1775 town meeting to support the Continental Congress in its defense of the colonies. In April of 1777 MATTHEW was named to a committee "to provide for the families of such soldiers as shall enlist with the Continental Army, with necessaries at prices stated by law". He did not just vote and serve on committees; he served in Captain David Olmstead's Company in Colonel Nehemiah Beardsley's Regiment. There is also a record of a Matthew Keeler, possibly the same one, serving in Colonel Enos' Regiment in 1778.

Many of the Danbury area forces fought in other parts of the colonies and unfortunately were away from the area in May of 1777 when British forces under General Tryon marched on Danbury to destroy the large store of Colonial supplies there. The town was burned. Tryon had used as his temporary headquarters the home of a Tory named Dibble, and the next day Dibble's barn was burned down by angry patriots. This Dibble was, we believe, the brother of JOHN DIBBLE of Newtown, and therefore the uncle of HANNAH DIBBLE, who married LEMUEL BEEBE's son LEMUEL.

There is a plaque at the Bethel Church cemetery listing Revolutionary War veterans, including LEMUEL BEEBE, JR., whose tombstone in the cemetery says he died on his 70th birthday in 1813. He and his wife HANNAH (DIBBLE) had ten children, five of whom died unaccountably in August 1775. Their eldest, a son named ETHEL, married NAOMI BARNUM: and two of their sons, ASEL and Levi, built a retail store in Danbury.

In Ridgefield MATTHEW and DEBORAH KEELER had 12 children, the youngest being named JONAH, after his grandfather. In 1794 he married REBECCA RAYMOND, daughter of the bride with the 15 slaves as a dowry. We may recall that 132 years earlier her great-great-great grandfather had bought a home in Norwalk from his great-great grandfather.

Their son RUFUS was a hatter by trade, with stores in New York city and as far south as Savannah. Despite his extensive business interests, he was born, lived, and died in Ridgefield, where he was a deacon in the Congregational Church. His first wife was Jane Lewis Sturges; whether she was any relation to EDWARD, the liquor importer from Yarmouth, is not known. She died in January of 1829, and by November of that year RUFUS had gone over to Yonkers, New York and married ANN ELIZA FOWLER. ANN was a fifth generation descendant of the HENRY who had neglected to obtain a marriage license in Providence; and she was also descended from several notable New York State families. Her mother was an Odell- granddaughter of ABRAHAM, who twice had survived being hanged from a tree, and daughter of an Underhill, descended from Captain JOHN UNDERHILL and JOHN BOWNE.

RUFUS and ANN had only one son, but they had seven daughters. One of these, EMILY FRANCES KEELER, married CHESTER CROSBY BRUSH, son of FLOYD BRUSH and FANNY CROSBY.

NELLIE VIRGINIA BRUSH, the fourth of seven children of CHESTER and EMILY, was born in Danbury in October of 1864, shortly before the reelection of Abraham Lincoln to his second term as President. In May of 1883, at the age of 18, she married George Shepard Baird, who was barely 17; and the couple lived in Bethel. Their first child, born in 1885 was Georgia Orphia Baird who, 23 years later, would marry Frederick Tipson.

In July of 1886 NELLIE gave birth to a second daughter, Julia Shepard Baird, who was mentally retarded; and seven months later NELLIE's husband George died. His death was the result of tuberculosis; and there has been some thought that their daughter's condition may have been the result of her father's being infected at the time she was conceived. Six years later, in 1892 in Bethel, NELLIE would remarry.

Chapter 8

DEAR JULIA

DAVID NICHOLAS BEEBE, son of ASEL and LUCIA (FAIRCHILD) BEEBE, was born on the last day of January 1837. Martin Van Buren was about to be inaugurated as the 8th President of the United States; and a few months later the country would experience its first major depression, with the New York and Philadelphia banks closing. Two years later, in 1839, Abner Doubleday supposedly laid out a diamond for the first game of baseball, Charles Goodyear discovered the process of vulcanizing rubber, and JULIA REBECCA BENEDICT was born in Bethel, Connecticut. She was the daughter of CYRIL HARRISON and ANGELINE (JUDD) BENEDICT of Bethel.

JULIA and DAVID became acquainted and then engaged to be married. DAVID was working in New York City and apparently returning home to Bethel on weekends. JULIA, who was still in Bethel, became a teacher. We have a note dated April (year obliterated) which says: "This is to certify that we have examined Miss Julia R. Benedict in Reading, Spelling, Geography, Grammar and Arithmetic; the branches usually taught in common schools and find her qualified to teach the same." This was signed by Wm Harvey and R.P. Lyon, whose official position was called "School Visitors".

That note was found with a collection of letters which JULIA kept and which have been passed down through three generations. Excerpts from these letters are copied below. The letters were all addressed to JULIA in Bethel, from DAVID in New York; or, during the times when she was with him in New York, from her mother, ANGELINE (JUDD) BENEDICT, in Bethel.

12-5-1860 from DAVID: "I have been wanting ever since my return to write you some of the thoughts of love that burn for you....my last Thanksgiving was the happiest of my life...I recall the telegraphing under the table, the dignity and decorum above....you had better make your plans to come down....Fondly, David".

(On 12 April 1861 Confederate forces attacked Fort Sumter; one week later President Lincoln declared a blockade of the South, and DAVID wrote)

4-19-1861 from DAVID: "Dearest Julia...I do not wonder and am not surprised at the excitement you feel in view of the startling news of every day....The war spirit is thoroughly aroused all over the country and I have felt stirred within me feelings that I never had before. I do not expect to enlist however just at present...I shall of discretion have to wait until I am wanted. I know many young men that go with the 7th regiment today - as I came

over today there came down to the ferry a couple that were engaged, he goes with the 7th, they parted at the ferry - I wonder if they will meet again. I guess there have been many sober, sad partings with loved ones for the best blood of the city goes with the Seventh Regiment. The city is flying with flags....Our firm offers 'that any of us who go to fight shall have his salary paid the same as if here'...I presume volunteers will be so numerous that there will be no danger of any being compelled to go at present. But I will not shirk if I am needed.....Your David.

(JULIA REBECCA BENEDICT and DAVID NICHOLAS BEEBE, both descendants of THOMAS BENEDICT, were married on September 10, 1861.)

5-1861 from JULIA's mother ANGELINE: "Dear Julia. I suppose by this time you would like to know how I got home....I have done a two week washing and ironing this week...Mrs. Beebe called for her dress on Friday, she said that she liked it very much and that she was very thankful for the trouble you took to change it for her....I shall ever look back upon that first visit to my dear children in their new home with pleasure....you spared no pains to make it pleasant for me...From your Mother AB."

1-10-1862 from mother: "My Dear Children...I am sorry that you have the sick headache....How does the small pox come on you said nothing about it in your last letter I hope that Lydia will not take it...you had not better call on her at present...You said that you was a going to attend a grand drill of the 7 regiment. I hope that David will not get the war fever...it does not look very much like peace yet...Your Mother A. Benedict."

2-6-1862 from mother: "My dear Julia...we have got another stormy day it is raining and freezing we have got a grate body of ice on the ground already it is good sleighing...Your father thinks that he shall not come to New York this cold weather...This from your Mother, A.Benedict"

(on 9 March 1862 the battle of the ironclads, Monitor vs Merrimac, took place off the Virginia Capes; the following day JULIA's mother wrote)

3-10-1862 from mother: "My Dear Julia...We were to have our pictures taken on Saturday but I hurt my eye so that it is black and blue and could not have it done I hit it against the corner of the stove door...I have plenty of pennyroyal and _____ but I think that if you would be more carefull and not get you feet wet it would be the best medicine...if there ever was a time when christians ought to humble themselves at the foot stool of the Cross and wrestle in _____ for a blessing to descend upon us as individual and as a nation it is the pressent time. This from your mother AB".

4-8-1862 from mother: "My Dear Julia...There has a request come to Danbury to have the ladies get up a box of bandages and lint for the soldiers and they came down to see if we would help them....I don't much think that I shall come to N. York this spring as you are about to change your boarding place as you say...Love A. Benedict."

7-__-1862 from mother: "My Dear Julia...Mrs. Deming hears no more from_____. They think that he may be dead. The Chaplain wrote to her that the last that he was seen the surgeon was with him and had just taken off his limb and the rebels came upon them and they could not move him and they left them on the battle field together..In love A.Benedict".

(JULIA's mother, ANGELINE, was visiting them in New York and received the following letter from her husband, CYRIL BENEDICT, in Bethel)

10-20-1862: "Dear Wife. I received Julia's letter on Saturday afternoon that you arrived all safe...you know that I could not come down on Saturday..some other time perhaps..very busy now picking corn...don't hurry home on my account getting on first rate. Affectionately C.H. Benedict"

(On New Years Day 1863 President Lincoln issued the Emancipation Proclamation. Two weeks later the next letter was written)

1-15-1863 from mother: "My Dear Julia...I could talk with you an hour or two I think but you know how hard it is for me to put my thoughts on paper. Last Sabbath was our sabbath school concert and the teachers and officers of the school presented Mr. Baldwin with a gold pen and holder costing \$8 and the superintendent Uncle William with one costing \$7...Tuesday night I had a light turn of the sick headache but it did not last as long as it does sometimes but I am afraid that Mr. Harts medicine will not cure me. Howard Woodman has been quite sick the past week with diptheria but it is better so today he has had his clothes on...You wrote that you had been sick was it not the consequence of over eating turkey and fried Oysters after having so much corn beef and cabbage you should be more careful when you go out to dinner....tell David not to work to hard...I hope that the time is not far distant when he will come to Bethel again...This from your Mother A Benedict".

(there is a gap of nearly two years in the correspondence we have, and sometime during that period JULIA went back to Bethel, leaving DAVID in New York. This next letter was written three days after President Lincoln was reelected and probably shortly after JULIA became pregnant with their first child)

11-9-1864 from DAVID: "My Dear Wife....I staid at the office until about 8 o'clock helping Mr. Elder with his inventory...he asked me afterward to go with him up to Delmonicos..he wanted me to come with him again to do selling and take the general oversight of the business...we got our Dinner at Delmonicos on corner 5th Ave & 14th St cost him \$5...he told me I could stay & help him and at same time be looking round for business or avail myself of any chance to go into business, I then told him about Meyer & Gimhermatr - he is going to get Mr. Havermeyer's opinion who knows best about it. Well I am yet uncertain what I shall do about that (going into business) probably if I don't go with Meyer I shall again resume a place with H&E...I saw John Hawley this morning & bought a pair of pants of him...I voted on Tuesday and was not challenged - I read today from Alexander his vote for Lincoln & Johnson....I am sorry that you are having such a hard time in work and that your mother is poorly...We shall probably select a Boarding place while you are down. Tom Havermeyer is going to the ____house to work...till then sweet love goodbye - David".

(GEORGE HAVERMEYER BEEBE was born 7-22-1865. His middle name quite likely comes from the Mr. Havermeyer mentioned in the preceding letter and evidently a business associate of DAVID)

1-31-1866 from DAVID in Milwaukee, written on stationery of Newhall House, W.S. Johnson & Co. Proprietors: "My Dear Julia. I reached this, the extreme northwest point of my journey at about 9 o'clock last night - left Chicago yesterday at 4:30 it was a very pleasant evening riding along in the fall moonlight...by the lake (Michigan)...had quite a conversation with Hon W.B. Judd...I had my under-clothes & night shirt washed at Sherman House...With fondest love to my ____wife & Baby from David".

(The following letters are written on the stationery of the Office of Pierson & Beebe, Merchandise Brokers, No. 90 Wall Street, New York)

3-14 -1866 from DAVID: "My Dear Julia..I sometimes think it is wrong to have you undergo alone those wakeful & watching nights but you know Darling he is 'your baby'... Have not been to see Hiram or Clement...I have sent for Commutation ticket on the Danbury Road today....With best love Yours as always & with kisses & love for Baby from Papa"

(Hiram and Clement are undoubtedly DAVID's two older brothers)

3-21-1866 from DAVID: "My Dear Wife....Monday was exceedingly dull & I could have staid over just as well as not for all business....I have changed your Corset and got a

'23' the other was size '20'....I hope you and Georgie get along nicely - he is 8 mos old tomorrow...Yours, David"

4-5-1866 from DAVID: "My Darling Wife....I went to the same store to get additional and found only one of the remnants left & they would not cut a $\frac{1}{4}$ yd off of that. I looked elsewhere but couldn't find it, so Georgie will have to wear them of mixed calico. I don't think he will care... sometimes I get disgusted with my vocation & wish I was a sugar Refiner or Grocer or even a Hatter...Yours, David".

(During the administration of President Andrew Johnson, 1865-1869, Congress passed the Civil Rights Bill, which Johnson vetoed; the 14th Amendment went into effect; and there was a movement to require payment of the war debt in gold).

4-10-1866 from DAVID: "My Darling wife...You might mention to my mother that I bought a barrel of flour for them which will probably reach Bethel by Thursday...I suppose we can all rejoice in the passage of the Civil Rights Bill by such a convincing majority & regret the near approach of the cholera to our shores - It will doubtless come over in some of our people & beat Quarantine ere long..with love as always, David".

4-19-1866 from DAVID: "My Dear Julia....I hope you will be able to come & spend at least one week more with me before the warm weather comes....I would like to have Georgie come as well to be baptized, have his picture taken & see his city friends but I suppose it would be hard for you....as always yours - David"

4-25-1866 from DAVID: "My Dear Wife....I selected a flat for you & Georgie this morning at Bigelows...I finally got some not trimmed & I think you can put on the finishing touches - yours is a sailors hat & cost \$4 & Georgie's cost \$3.50...The steamboat runs to Norwalk now in connection with the Danbury Road - I understand the fare is to be 50¢.... Yours - David"

6-19-1866 from DAVID: "My Darling Julia. I reached office about 10 o'clock yesterday was pretty busy in the early part of the day Gold opening at 167 $\frac{1}{2}$ made quite an excitement & declining so quickly to 150 today makes business dull....today my teeth & ear ache quite badly no yesterday some, last evening more & through the night I was more or less in pain and today it is very anguish most of the time. I have a bottle of _____ and one Camphor and have been applying externally & internally all night & today - soaked cotton in my right ear...I have taken cold and it has settled in one of my old teeth - one of those filled with mercury (Dr. Ryder's work).....with love, Yours always, David".

6-26-1866 from DAVID: "My Dear Julia...I will write you now being reminded by Mr. Pierson writing his daily epistle to his wife. I suppose P&B pay the postage both ways...We are not doing a very profitable business now. I wish I was sure of the agency of the Portland Refining....I have done nothing more about getting a place in Plainfield, thought I would consider it fully first....I am yours, David".

7-16-1866 from DAVID: "My Dear Julia....I hope Georgie is well. I would not urge him to walk much. Field says (& he knows) that when they are getting teeth they ought not to be urged to walk or show off for everybody that comes along as it takes much of the little strength & vitality a baby has....Tom Havemeyer is going to Europe next week....Yours affy David".

7-26-1866 from DAVID: "My Dear Julia...Mr. Pierson takes the best part of the day for writing to his wife when he would be showing his affection more if he was trying to make some money for them...Yours - David".

8-8-1866 from DAVID: "My Dear Julia...I am looking morning & afternoon for a house have seen several but decided on nothing. I saw one this morning that strikes me rather favorably....The objection to me is that I fear it would prove too snug....The location is good -260 Clermont Ave. - 2nd door from Lafayette - almost the highest ground in Brooklyn. It could be made real nice and we could furnish it and make a little bird cage of it. It can be bought at \$3,700. The lot I suppose is worth \$2,300...I have looked at others, they are nearly all too large. I have not yet found 'just the cheese'.....Since writing I have been to see the owner of the house I have written of and it has been sold today..With best love I remain yours affy - David"

8-21-1866 from DAVID: "My Dear Julia...Come down Thursday morning if you can. The noon train does not get you in until 6 o'clock. I would not bring more than a Carpet Bag unless you think your purchases will require a trunk...Your aff Husband David".

9-5-1866 from DAVID: "My Dear Julia...I was out at Cumberland Dr. last night found everything about our house unchanged - I went to see the woman that had the cow 'with the crumpled horn' found her milking and she engaged to let us have one or two quarts a day as we want & deliver the same at 10¢ per qt & 12¢ in winter....shall go right ahead after the 10th with gas fitting & cleaning and think by the 20th we shall find our way to bring our boy & _____ down.. am patiently waiting for the time to come when I shall see you both every day. Yours affy, David".

9-11-1866 from DAVID: "My Dear Julia...was not able to complete the transfer of the House but have finished it up

this morning. Mr Brush puts in a new Boiler & makes things right generally....the woman I expected to get to clean the house is now cleaning the one next door...she has \$1.50 per day, does not want any hot water only a brush pail and soap. I shall try and select Gas fixtures today & have them put in...Hiram thinks they shall want the front room although he did not feel like paying \$20...I think we shall want our back parlor furnished if they board with us. I am rather glad they will be with us it will not be so lonely and it will help us out on expenses and I hope they will not be bothersome to you....I suppose you bore in mind yesterday that it was your fifth anniversary. I thought of it many times it does not seem longer than yesterday that we journeyed from your house to Brewster thence to Albany and Niagara. I trust the next 5 years may be as pleasant as the past. We are about to take upon us new responsibilities in a 'home of our own' it sounds pleasant after all our wanderings hither & yon to think that we are to establish our own family fireside to be somebody that lives somewhereI think it probable that I shall stay up Monday & Tuesday if necessary to pack up our Furniture - I hope you will be able to return with me.....Yours affy, David"

(Hiram in the preceding paragraph is DAVID's brother, married to Rebecca Hickok. We don't know who the Mr. Brush is who installed the new boiler; however, DAVID's son GEORGE would eventually marry a widow whose maiden name had been Brush. Also that was the last letter written on Pierson & Beebe stationery. The following letters are from JULIA's mother, addressed c/o P.& B.)

1-7-1867 from mother: "My Dear Julia....I suppose that you were very busy during the holidays I hope that you have got another girl and one that you will like and that you can depend upon. It is very fine sleighing here...This from your Mother A. Benedict - Kiss Georgie on both cheeks for me".

1-14-1867 from mother: "My Dear Julia....she said that Georgie was quite poorly yet that his teeth had not got through...We are to have a temperance meeting here tonight - a lecturer from Broklyne...they have shut up all the rum shops in Danbury and I hope that they will stay shut...This from your Mother A. Benedict".

6-4-1867 from mother: "My Dear Julia....today we have got a clear day once more my clothes have got dry and I have rolled them up for ironing....I have got sore eyes...I think that I have sewed too much by lamp light one of them is bad today it is quite inflamed. I have got some eye water for them.. This from your Mother, AB".

10-24-1867 from Mother: "My Dear Julia...glad to hear that David wants to come up to Thanksgiving tell him I will

have a turkey if he will come...kiss both the children for me This from your mother AB".

(DAVID and JULIA had two daughters, Mary and Alice; and evidently Mary had been born recently)

12-11-1867 from mother: "My Dear Julia...do not know whether I can go Christmas or not yet we have got to butcher next week and I always have so much to do after...This from your Mother, AB.To Georgie grandma wants to see him very much I hope that you are a good boy and mind your papa and mama and are kind to little sister Mary...grandma heard a little mouse in the bedroom and grandpa went and got the old kitty and put her in the hole in the fire board and she caught it in her mouth and then she jumped out of the hole onto grandma with it...This from your Grandma".

* * *

JULIA's mother, ANGELINE, died in August of 1882; and six months later her father CYRIL HARRISON BENEDICT also passed away. DAVID's mother, LUCIA (FAIRCHILD) BEEBE, had died in 1873. DAVID, for reasons unknown to us, predeceased all of them, dying in October of 1870 at age 33. In 1872 his widow JULIA married his older brother Clement, whose first wife had passed away.

JULIA and DAVID were both members of the Bethel Congregational Church, the church founded by their ancestors in 1759. Both eventually transferred their memberships, he in 1855 and she in 1862, to the Plymouth Church in Brooklyn, a church which in the 1980's and 1990's would include among its members their great-great granddaughter Barbara Kathryn Hathaway.

Alice, the youngest of the three children of DAVID and JULIA, married Dr. George Hawley; and they had a daughter Julia Hawley. She was briefly married to Ralston Hewitt and lived in Brooklyn, where she died in 1986.

GEORGE HAVERMEYER BEEBE, the GEORGIE of the above letters, married the widow NELLIE VIRGINIA (BRUSH) BAIRD in 1892 in Bethel; and they had two daughters: Grace Benedict Beebe and KATHRYN BEEBE, the future Mrs. WILBUR T. HARKRADER.

-

PART III

The Pioneers

The Harkrader line: the ancestry of Alice McGrew and Tullis Talmage Harkrader, who were married in 1896 at Cincinnati, Ohio and were the parents of Wilbur Talmage Harkrader, Mildred Harkrader and Milton Keene Harkrader. Both the Harkrader and McGrew families had been among the early settlers of southwestern Ohio - on the land between the Miami River and the East Fork of the Little Miami: Butler, Clermont, Hamilton and Warren Counties.

Chapter 9

BETWEEN THE MIAMIS

On August 27, 1733 the ship Elizabeth arrived at Philadelphia from Rotterdam, and among the 192 passengers aboard was JOHANNES HERRGEROEDER from Germany. Since the name has taken many forms in America, there has been some speculation that it had originally been written incorrectly by a Customs or Immigration Officer; however, the Pennsylvania Archives indicate that JOHANNES signed his own name in his own hand.

There has also been speculation as to why he came to America. The best guess here is that he was from the Palatinate, southern Germany around Bavaria; and that the political and economic conditions there, after years of war and absence of a stable central government, had become intolerable. Whatever the specific reason may have been, it is safe to say that he expected to find a better life here.

JOHANNES settled in Maxatawny, Pennsylvania. This is in the northeastern part of Berks County, near the Lehigh County line and about 12 miles west of Allentown. There we find his name on the 1752 tax lists and as a witness to the 1763 will of one Jacob Hottenstein. Another family among the early settlers of this section of Berks County were the Fenstermachers, possibly the ancestors of a young lady who, over two centuries later, would marry a seventh generation descendant of JOHANNES.

JOHANNES had eleven children, with a span of 36 years between oldest and youngest. We believe he was married twice, the second wife being ANNA MARIA DEHOF, the mother of the youngest son, BENJAMIN. While BENJAMIN is the son in our line, we should take a moment to meet the oldest son, John, who is probably the best known of the early family members and the one whose records give us the best information on the early family.

The family name, of course, became Harkrader; and John appears to have used that spelling through most of his life. Born in Berks County in 1750, he moved southwestward to Lancaster County in time to volunteer for service in the Revolutionary War. On the 1st of August in 1775 he was commissioned a Lieutenant in the 2nd Battalion of Lancaster County. He served five different short hitches in the colonial forces; this was not unusual, as men would return home between tours of duty to care for their farms and their families. His various periods of service took him to the banks of the Hudson across from New York City, on a march to battle the Hessians at Trenton (the battle was over before he arrived), and twice to Philadelphia.

There are indications that JOHANNES and some of the

children moved for a brief time to Frederick, Maryland; but by the late 1790's most of the family had continued southward to Wythe County in the southwestern corner of Virginia. It was apparently about this time that the spelling of the family name changed. The St. John's Lutheran Church was established in 1799 about a mile north of Wytheville, and the lists of early members and subscribers to the building fund include various people named Hercherother, Harkerider and Harkrader. Captain John Harkrader and his youngest brother BENJAMIN appear to have been among the early members, and two of BENJAMIN's children, Anna and ELLISON, appear on its baptismal records.

John Harkrader and some of his brothers and sisters remained in southwestern Virginia, and the name Harkrader is still prominent in the twin cities of Bristol, Tennessee/Virginia. In 1956 Charles J. Harkrader was Chairman of the Board of The First National Bank of Bristol, his son was a physician there, and in the 1980's there was a Harkrader tire and auto service business in Bristol.

In southwestern Ohio, extending northward from Cincinnati, is an area once known as the Between The Miamis Survey, so called because it was between the Miami River and the Little Miami River, and consisting of portions of Hamilton, Butler and Warren Counties. Under the terms of the U.S. Land Act of 1800, land was purchased from the Cincinnati Land Office at prices ranging from \$1.25 to \$4.00 an acre. On 16 August 1811, five days after the birth of his son ELLISON, BENJAMIN HARKRADER purchased land in Butler County. Since ELLISON was baptized at the St. John's Church near Wytheville in September, it appears that CATHERINE and the children didn't make the trip to Ohio right away.

BENJAMIN apparently was a farmer; his will, proved in 1860, refers to "the plantation on which we now reside.... containing about one hundred and eight acres", and leaves his wife (second wife Elizabeth), among other things, "one horse and buggy, one milk cow, and...". He also owned two smaller properties in adjacent Warren County: 50 acres purchased from Henry Raquet in 1830 and two acres purchased from Thomas S. Naylor in 1843.

The description of the larger of these two parcels is rather interesting, containing both precise surveying language and reference to objects which may or may not have endured: "...beginning at the South East corner of Section numbered One in Township numbered Two of Range number four between the Miami Rivers; thence North on the Section line thirty-four chains and fifty links to a post or stone witnessed by an Elm marked H and a Hickory marked B;-thence South thirty-four chains and fifty links to the South side of said Section to a stake or stone witnessed by an Elm; and from thence on the said South boundary of said Section fourteen chains and fifty links to the place of beginning".

Throughout the 19th century, descendants of BENJAMIN HARKRADER owned land in Lemon Township in the eastern part of Butler County, adjacent to Turtle Creek Township in Warren County. Much of this was in, or just south of, a small village called Blueball, which sits right on the county line in the corner of what is now the city of Middletown. The name Blueball came from a tavern sign at what had been a station for the mail and stage coaches running between Cincinnati and Dayton. There was a Presbyterian Church there, and a post office was established in 1844.

Stage coaches and other horse drawn vehicles require the services of a blacksmith, and the first blacksmith shop in Butler County was built by a Maranda Shafer who, in 1840, sold it to ELLISON HARKRADER. This shop was in Amanda, about three miles southwest of Blueball. ELLISON sold the shop to William Bailey, and in 1847 Bailey sold it. ELLISON was listed in the 1850 and 1860 censuses as a farmer, with real estate valued at \$9,000 in 1850 and \$40,000 ten years later.

On 16 July 1835 ELLISON married MARGARET TULLIS. Try as we may, it has not been possible to state exactly who MARGARET's parents were. However, what information we do have indicates that her father was probably Thomas B. Tullis, who was in Lemon Township, Butler County in 1830. This Thomas Tullis bought and sold much land in the vicinity of Middletown. It further appears that he had been born in New Jersey, probably of one of the several Tullis families of Salem and Cumberland Counties who moved to Warren County, Ohio between 1790 and 1810.

ELLISON accumulated a substantial amount of property, including livestock, farm equipment and 189 acres; and he did not let either his land nor his money sit idle. He sold land, rented land to tenants, and made loans to the Blueball Presbyterian Church and to most of his eight children. In fact his will consists to a great extent of forgiving notes which he held against his children. This will was written in July 1886, with codicils (amendments) dated March 1890, March 1893 and June 1895. It is a rather interesting document; and, considering that he didn't die until 1898, he spent a lot of time keeping it up to date. Let's look at some examples.

The original will gave 55 acres to his daughter Nancy Carr, but she was to pay his estate \$110 per acre. This did not include 7 acres which he had already deeded to her and her husband for \$2,000, which sum had evidently not yet been paid and which was forgiven in the will. To his son Bruce he left 60 acres, for which Bruce was to pay the estate \$120 per acre, except that Bruce was given a credit of \$2,000 including forgiveness of two notes totalling \$150. To his son

ELLISON T. he gave back a note for \$6,166.80; and to his son John Hyndman Harkrader (Carl Harkrader's father) he gave \$2,000 credit toward repayment of a \$2,500 note. After some other small bequeaths and the payment for those lands, the residue of the estate (including the land payments) was to be equally divided among five of the children. ELLISON T., whose \$6,100 was considered full settlement, was not included in this settlement.

After signing this will, ELLISON loaned some more money to his children in 1887; and in an 1890 codicil he forgave these, divided the residue into six shares, and included some grandchildren. Up to this point no mention had been made of a wife, so we may assume that MARGARET had died before 1886. However, in an 1893 codicil he mentions his second wife Mina and specifically leaves her "any and all articles of household furniture bought since my marriage to my present wife...". This codicil further takes \$3,000 from the sum previously left to grandchildren and directs that it be used to erect a monument to their mother and his daughter Eliza Young. We can only assume from this that Eliza, the fourth of his eight children, and MARGARET had both been the victims of some accident or illness.

A third codicil bequeaths, "to my son J.H. Harkrader the sum of one thousand dollars. The same to be placed as a credit on a note of \$2500 I hold against him. The same to be to him over and above any interest he may have in my estate. I am led to make the sum \$1000 instead of \$2000 as named in item 6 of my____will because of the money I gave him when he bought the farm near Monroe and the gift of \$2000 in consideration of such prior assistance would it now appears work some injustice to my other children. And it is my desire to deal justly and fairly with all and each of my children". Well, he had certainly given it a good try! And, unlike most of our early ancestors, he had had the foresight to write his will 12 years before his death, something which is quite common today.

In August of 1898 ELLISON's three sons filed a petition in the Butler County Probate Court requesting that a guardian be appointed for their father. The form used for such an application was entitled, "Application For Appointment Of Guardian For Idiot, Imbecile, Lunatic or Drunkard" and refers to ELLISON as "an alleged imbecile". However, it then goes on to say that he was 87 years old and "is enfeebled by age and by reason thereof is incapable of taking care of or preserving his property...". This description, together with information presented on depositions from relatives, indicates that he was merely becoming senile.

ELLISON and his second wife Mina are listed as defendants in this case; and the depositions indicate that there was some disagreement or hostility between his children on

the one hand and their stepmother on the other hand. ELLISON died less than three months after the taking of those depositions, and we have no record showing the outcome of the petition.

Who, and where, were ELLISON's children? The daughters were Mary Elizabeth Collins of Brooklyn, NY; Louella Weiss of Newark, NJ; and Nancy Carr and Alta Jane Bagley, both of Blueball. The sons were John Hyndman and Bruce, both of Blueball; and ELLISON T. who listed Blueball as his official residence but apparently had actually left the county well before his father's death.

In October 1870 ELLISON T. had married one Margaret A. Murray, and about the same time a son Wilbur was born. ELLISON T. and Margaret were divorced, and in 1880 young Wilbur was living with his grandparents, the elder ELLISON and MARGARET (TULLIS). ELLISON T. then married SUSAN EMMA HILL, and she was the mother of his next three children. TULLIS TALMAGE HARKRADER was born in Middletown (actually in Blueball) in 1875, during the second term of President Ulysses S. Grant. His sister Ariel was born in Indiana in 1877, and by 1880 the family was living in Cincinnati at 94 John Street. Another son, Ellison Hill Harkrader, was born about 1885. ELLISON T. worked for the Vital Chemical Company, in St. Louis for a while and later in Chicago, where he was working at the time of his father's death.

What happened to the marriage of ELLISON T. and SUSAN EMMA (HILL) HARKRADER after 1880 is rather hard to figure out from the records. Cincinnati directories from 1889 to 1904 show SUSAN EMMA and one or more of the children living at the same address, but they do not list ELLISON T. The 1899 directory lists SUSAN EMMA as a widow; yet we know that ELLISON T. was alive in February of that year when he signed a waiver on his father's will, signing it in South Bend, Indiana. Were he and SUSAN divorced and the "widow" listing a mistake? Was he, as some family records indicate, married a third time to someone named Jessie? Perhaps the best clue is a comment by one of his grandchildren, who referred to him as a no good _____ who didn't support his family. Whatever and wherever ELLISON T. may have been, he and SUSAN were the forerunners of some very successful people.

SUSAN EMMA evidently went to work for one of the Cincinnati newspapers. In 1893 she was listed as a reporter, and in 1895 and 1902 as a journalist. Living with her in 1893 at E. 4th Street and later in 1895 was her son T.T., who was listed as TALMAGE T., rather than TULLIS. The same Cincinnati directories show that at 36 Worth Street was someone named ALICE MCGREW.

Chapter 10

CLERMONT COUNTY AND THE METHODISTS

Ellicott City, Maryland is located in the Patapsco River Valley about 10 miles west of Baltimore. It is the county seat of Howard County, although it is right on the border of Baltimore County, of which it once was a part. All or part of the town was once known as Ellicott Mills, and it was in Ellicott Mills that ANDREW MCGREW settled shortly after the end of the Revolutionary War.

ANDREW, according to family tradition, had come down from Pennsylvania after having served in the Colonial forces from that colony. He married HANNAH RUST, who we assume was a member of the rather well known Rust family of Virginia and Maryland. Unfortunately we have as yet been unable to learn anything about the parents or birthplace of either ANDREW or HANNAH, although we do know that they were born in 1760 and 1762 respectively. ANDREW, therefore, must have been quite young when he fought in the Revolution.

* * *

The Methodist Church was founded in England about 1740 by John Wesley as an offshoot of the Church of England, and it began to develop in America shortly after the Revolutionary War. Most of the early Methodists were in or near Maryland, and one of their early preachers was a man named Philip Gatch, son of a Church of England family in Baltimore. To spread the word, many of the Methodist preachers became circuit riders, travelling around the country preaching to whomever would listen. They were not always well received; and Gatch, who rode the Frederick County circuit for a while, reported that he had been beaten, mobbed, tarred and nearly assassinated.

Gatch was reassigned to a Virginia circuit in 1778, and 20 years after that he moved to Ohio. According to information handed down through the McGrew family, ANDREW and HANNAH MCGREW were friends of Philip and Elizabeth Gatch and went to Ohio with them. This may be true, as Ellicott City is between Baltimore and Frederick County, and they may well have known each other. However, we know that ANDREW MCGREW was in Maryland in October of 1798 when he voted in an election; we know that Gatch arrived in Ohio that same fall; and the first record we have of MCGREW in Ohio is eight years later.

* * *

The Rev. Francis McCormick is somewhat of an enigma. He had been in the Revolution, serving under LaFayette at Yorktown, become a clergyman, and somehow come into possess-

ion of 1000 acres of land in Clermont County, Ohio, land which he subdivided and sold to settlers as they arrived. There, in 1797, he founded the Methodist Episcopal Church of Milford, which is about ten miles east of Cincinnati, on the Little Miami River. In the fall of 1798 Rev. Gatch arrived, and the following year the Miami Circuit of the Kentucky Methodist Conference was established.

In 1806 ANDREW and HANNAH (RUST) MCGREW sold their farm at Ellicott Mills and, with their nine children, arrived at Milford and bought the last remaining lot from Rev. McCor-mick. Also arriving in Clermont County that year were a Paul Rust and his mother, undoubtedly relatives of HANNAH. The McGrews joined the Methodist Episcopal Church, which at that time was holding meetings in the cabins of the various members. The first church building was built in 1818; and the first Board of Trustees consisted of Philip Gatch, ANDREW MCGREW and five others, "who built a meeting house of such staunch timber that it remains to this day (1880) to attest the faithful workmanship of those employed upon it". Also still standing in 1880 were the chimneys of ANDREW MCGREW's first log house.

However much or little the McGrews and Gatch's may have known each other in Maryland, the families evidently were close in Ohio. Margaret McGrew, the third child and oldest daughter of ANDREW and HANNAH, married Conduce Gatch, the preacher's son. Two of Margaret's brothers would marry girls from New Jersey.

* * *

In the latter part of the 17th century, several families from Long Island settled in Cape May County, the southern tip of New Jersey. Among these people was Nathan Newton. They were engaged in whaling and settled first at Town Bank, just north of the present day Cape May - Lewes ferry terminal. The whaling industry eventually failed, and these settlers turned to other maritime pursuits or to farming; and at one time there were large Newton plantations in what are now Cape May Point and North Cape May, with some Newtons as far up the Delaware Bay coast as Green Creek.

In 1811 EBENEZER NEWTON and his two adult daughters left the Cape May area and moved westward to Clermont County, Ohio. Unfortunately we have been unable to find the exact line from Nathan or some other early Newton down to this EBENEZER. We have found Ebenezer Newtons registering their cattle's ear marks in 1711 and 1752, signing a will in 1739, having an estate settled in 1754, owning a large plantation in 1715 and being the County Surrogate in 1796. The last may well be our man.

Both of EBENEZER's daughters married sons of ANDREW and

HANNAH. Nancy Newton married Paul McGrew, and her sister RACHEL married Paul's older brother WILLIAM.

About 1812 ANDREW started to spell the family name Megrue, and it was some years later before the children changed it back to McGrew. ANDREW was an influential citizen of Milford, being involved in farming, surveying and paper manufacturing; and he served as a justice of the peace. His friend Philip Gatch became an Associate Judge in Clermont County and represented the county at the Ohio Constitutional Convention in 1802. EBENEZER NEWTON became a teacher in Milford's first school.

ANDREW MCGREW/MEGRUE died in 1823, his wife having died the previous year. Both are buried in the Old Gatch Cemetery in Milford, now a part of the Greenlawn Cemetery. There is an inventory associated with ANDREW's will which lists values assigned to various property, the valuations supposedly having been assigned by ANDREW himself. They are interesting in that they show not only what he had but what he considered the various items to be worth.

1 Cupboard and Book Case.....	8.00
1 Corner Cupboard.....	7.00
1 Gun Case and Gun.....	1.75
1 Featherbed.....	6.50
1 Bed and bedding.....	15.00
1 Breakfast table.....	2.00
1 Big Bible.....	5.00
1 Settee.....	1.25
1 Cow.....	8.00
5 Vol of Washington's Life.....	12.00
1 Kitchen Cabinet.....	3.75
1 Pair Saddle Bags.....	12 $\frac{1}{2}$
1 Saw and Wood Plane.....	1.00
1 Jack Screw.....	4.00
1 Log Chain.....	10.00
23 $\frac{1}{2}$ Acres.....	82.00
1 Wind Mill.....	10.00

We may assume that values in Ohio at that time were based solely on supply and demand. It is interesting to note the high values given to books as compared to land at \$3.49 an acre.

WILLIAM and RACHEL (NEWTON) MCGREW moved a few miles northeast of Milford to Mulberry (called Newberry then), where they had a store. They had eight children; but three of these, including the first born Ebenezer, died at a young age. The second, PAUL RUST MCGREW, and fourth, Andrew McGrew III, both lived into their eighties and had second wives much younger than they were.

Andrew III married Mary Ann Bronson, who died at the

age of 48 having had no children. He then married Sarah Bailey, 23 years his junior, and they had four children. Andrew and Sarah lived in Milford in the old family home.

Andrew's older brother, PAUL RUST MCGREW, married Martha Maddock, and they had seven children before she passed away. PAUL then married SUSAN ANN JONES, who was 32 years younger than he. SUSAN ANN's father was JOHN JONES, whose name has made him just a little difficult to identify and trace. There was a Jones family in Clermont County as early as 1819, when we find Rev. Philip Gatch performing a marriage for one Thomas Jones. However, there are conflicting census and cemetery records, some showing that he and his wife, ELEANOR AUSTIN, were both born in North Carolina and some showing both born in Ohio. SUSAN ANN was born at Mount Washington, Ohio.

There is some confusion in census records between this PAUL R. MCGREW and his cousin Paul, but as best we can figure out, PAUL and his first wife Martha lived first in Batavia, where he was a farmer, and then in Amelia in 1860, where he was listed as an omnibus conductor.

After marrying SUSAN, PAUL moved to Plum Street in Cincinnati, but they visited frequently with Andrew and Sarah in Milford, riding the Interurban trolley car back and forth. SUSAN and Sarah, both being second wives much younger than their husbands, apparently had much in common and enjoyed each other's company.

PAUL and SUSAN had four children. The eldest, Fannie, married Alfred Terrill Morris; and she is the grandmother of Morris Cecil, who provided some of the information for this chapter. The next daughter was ALICE. The family evidently moved one or two more times, within the city of Cincinnati; and by 1894 they were on Worth Street and ALICE was listed as a saleslady.

-

PART IV

Between New Bedford and Amesbury

The Hathaway line: the ancestry of Sarah Abbot Bushby and Charles Willard Hathaway, who were married in 1887 at Peabody, Massachusetts and were the parents of Henry Bushby Hathaway. This ancestral line had inputs from the early settlers of the Dartmouth-New Bedford and Essex County areas of eastern Massachusetts.

Chapter 11

THE LAST PILGRIM

In November of 1652 SARAH COOKE, daughter of one Mayflower passenger and granddaughter of two, married ARTHUR HATHAWAY in Duxbury. Sometime between 1656 and 1662 they and their two oldest children joined SARAH's parents and a handful of others in settling Dartmouth, one of the three tracts reserved by the Plymouth Colony for the "Old Comers". This settlement included the present day city of New Bedford and towns of Acushnet, Dartmouth, Fairhaven and Westport.

Dartmouth was not settled rapidly; by 1670 there were only seven freemen residents, including JOHN COOKE, ARTHUR HATHAWAY and JOHN RUSSELL. COOKE, although excommunicated from the Plymouth church for becoming a Baptist, had still been an active member of the Plymouth Colony and had been involved in several land purchases. His father, FRANCIS COOKE, with whom he had left Holland and come to America, had also been eligible for Old Comers land at Dartmouth but died without ever moving there.

COOKE's son-in-law, ARTHUR HATHAWAY was the son of another ARTHUR, who had remained in Duxbury. These ARTHUR HATHAWAYS were the start of one of the two principal Hathaway lines in America. The other branch of the Hathaways is descended from Nicholas, who settled in Freetown, right next to the Dartmouth settlement and including the present day city of Fall River. Despite this proximity, there is no indication that Nicholas and ARTHUR were related. ARTHUR had lived in Marshfield, Lakenham and Duxbury before going to Dartmouth, where he served as a selectman and a magistrate. His property in Dartmouth was next to JOHN COOKE's farm.

JOHN RUSSELL had also been in Marshfield before buying a share in the Dartmouth tract from Edward Gray for 42 pounds. He served as Dartmouth's representative to the Colonial Court every year from 1665 to 1683 except for two years when COOKE had that position.

Another early settler of Dartmouth was THOMAS POPE, a man whose life certainly had its ups and downs. Arriving at Plymouth sometime before 1634, he served in the capacities of constable and highway surveyor and married a lady named Ann Fallowell. She evidently passed away within the next few years, and in 1646 THOMAS married SARAH JENNEY, daughter of THOMAS and SARAH (CAREY) JENNEY, who had operated the grist mill at Plymouth. Shortly after the last of their seven children was born, THOMAS began to get himself in all sorts of trouble.

In 1659 he was involved in a boundary dispute with a William Shurtleff, and the same year he was fined ten

shillings for "abusive carriage" against Shurtleff's father-in-law, Thomas Lettice. In December of 1663 POPE and Gyles Rickard were arrested "for breaking the King's peace by striking each other and were fined three shillings and four pence"; and "said Pope, for his striking of said Rickard's wife, and for other turbulent carriages in word and deed, the Court have centenanced him to find sureties for his good behavior".

Whether THOMAS found the required "sureties" or not is not certain, but he decided to move. After trying without success to obtain land at Sakonnet at the mouth of Narragansett Bay, he moved with his family to the new Dartmouth settlement in 1674. His Dartmouth land was probably that which had been originally deeded to his mother-in-law 22 years earlier, but which she evidently had not used. As we shall see, THOMAS had not picked a good time to move to Dartmouth.

Fifty five years of peace between the Plymouth Colony and the Indians came to an end on 23 June 1675 when the Wampanoags attacked the village of Swansea. There were several causes of King Philip's War, but the underlying problem must have been the gradual encroachment of the English onto the lands of the Wampanoags. Whether JOHN COOKE's involvement in land purchases made him a special target is questionable, but a week after the Swansea attack the Wampanoags hit Dartmouth. It was early in the morning, and the inhabitants all headed for a garrison house, of which COOKE's was one. THOMAS POPE's son John, daughter Susannah, and Susannah's husband Jacob Mitchell were all heading for the garrison on horseback when they were overtaken and killed.

Increase Mather, pastor of the North Church in Boston and author of A Brief History of the War With the Indians, had this to say about the raid: "Dartmouth did they burn with fire, and barbariously murdered both men and women, stripping the slain whether men or women and leaving them in the open field. Such, also, is their inhumanity as that they slash off the skin from their faces and heads of those they got into their hands, and go away with the hairy scalps of their enemies".

Except for the garrison, all 30 or so of the houses in Dartmouth were burned; and the town was abandoned until the middle of 1676, when the war ended with Philip's death. In all, 21 towns in Massachusetts were at least partially destroyed during the war. Betwen 500 and 600 men of military age were killed, and some of the destroyed towns were not resettled for 40 years. England sent no aid to the colonies to assist in rebuilding. The only outside assistance was 1,000 pounds for the needy from the Protestant churches of Dublin, Ireland. COOKE, RUSSELL and Lieut John Smith distributed Dartmouth's share, 22 pounds.

SARAH (WARREN) COOKE died in 1676, whether before or after the end of hostilities we do not know. The town was rebuilt; and in 1684 a Baptist Church was established , with JOHN COOKE serving as its pastor for 11 years although he was never ordained. In 1691 the Plymouth Colony was merged with, or absorbed by if you prefer, the Massachusetts Bay Colony. JOHN COOKE had lived in the Colony throughout its entire existence.

JOHN died on 23 November 1695 and was buried in what is now Fairhaven. A bronze plaque in a small park at the corner of Cherry St. and Pilgrim Ave. is inscribed, "Sacred to the memory of John Cooke who was buried here in 1695. The last surviving male Pilgrim of those who came over on the Mayflower. First white settler of this town. The pioneer in its religious, moral and business life. A man of character and integrity, and the trusted agent for this part of the Commonwealth of the Old Colonial Civil Government of Plymouth".

ARTHUR HATHAWAY had had a 1/68 share in the original Dartmouth settlement, and in 1696 he deeded much of this land to Jonathan and Thomas, the youngest of his three sons. Then, on his death in 1711, the remaining land was left to his oldest son JOHN. JOHN's property was mostly on the west, or New Bedford, side of the Acushnet River, extending from the river westward to the site of present day Mt. Pleasant Street. In later years the Whitman, Manomet, Nonquit and Nashawena mills would be built on this property; and today the path of Interstate Route 195 across New Bedford is largely on what was JOHN HATHAWAY's land.

Shortly after 1711 JOHN and four others built a grist mill and saw mill on part of this property. The others were his brothers Thomas and Jonathan, Thomas Taber and Seth Pope. Pope, oldest son of THOMAS, already had owned one grist mill, but not in Dartmouth. He had been a peddler at one time and had ventured into the town of Sandwich with his wares. He was run out of town; but, as he was leaving, he vowed to return and buy the town. Back in Dartmouth he became a succesful businessman, selectman, representative to the General Court and magistrate of Bristol County. In 1700 he did return to Sandwich, purchasing land and a grist mill with a total value of 3,460 pounds.

Seth Pope is a key link in a rather interesting family relationship. His younger sister JOANNA, nine years his junior, married JOHN HATHAWAY. His oldest daughter Susannah married JOHN's younger (by 18 years) brother Jonathan. Thus JOANNA (POPE) HATHAWAY was both aunt and sister-in-law to Susannah. This is only the start of a longer story.

* * *

Jonathan and Susannah had a son, also named Jonathan, who married Bridget Delano, a third generation descendant of Philip Delano, JOHN COOKE's cousin. Jonathan and Bridget had a son Nathaniel, married to a lady named Robin. Nathaniel was captain of a ship operating out of New York and died at sea in 1802. A Captain Eldridge of New Bedford was appointed guardian of Robin and their 1½ year old daughter Mary. In 1824 Mary married Alexander Stiles of Greenwich, Connecticut.

Alexander and Mary lived in various parts of New York State: they were married in New York City, he died in Utica, she died at Kingston and their son William H. was born at Smithtown on Long Island. William's son Gilbert married Jeanette Williams of Cincinnati, and they were the parents of Lynn D. Stiles. Lynn married Grace Benedict Beebe, and they, as we know, were the parents of William Hathaway Stiles, who therefore is descended from the early generations of this Hathaway line as well as from the entire Brush-Beebe line.

* * *

If we have survived that last bit of genealogical confusion, we may now proceed to a long line of Hathaways named John. ARTHUR HATHAWAY's son JOHN, as noted above, married JOANNA POPE; and they named their first son JOHN. That JOHN married ALICE LANDERS, a great granddaughter of EDMUND FREEMAN, the founder of Sandwich. JOHN and ALICE also had a son named JOHN; and he married DEBORAH RUSSELL, great-great granddaughter of the JOHN RUSSELL who had been one of the original Dartmouth settlers.

The first JOHN HATHAWAY was born in Duxbury, the next two in Dartmouth. Then, in August of 1762, DEBORAH gave birth to a fourth JOHN; but they also gave this one a middle name - GARDNER. Middle names were not common among the early Hathaways, or at least they didn't record them; and while JOHN GARDNER's name serves to identify him rather well, it also raises the question of where it came from. There was a large family of Gardners with branches in both the Salem-Marblehead area and the New Bedford-Nantucket area; and, looking ahead, two of JOHN GARDNER HATHAWAY's sons would marry daughters of Captain Benjamin Gardner. However, no earlier connection has become apparent.

JOHN GARDNER HATHAWAY's birthplace also raises a question. His parents were from Dartmouth, both going back four generations to the original settlers of that town; yet his birthplace is listed as Freetown, a neighboring town but one heavily populated by Hathaways of an entirely different line. After many inquiries on this, nothing has come to light to refute this information from Hathaways of America, so we shall assume that it is correct.

And it is important that we be able to place JOHN GARDNER, as he is the link between the early Hathaways of Dartmouth and our more recent ancestors in Essex County, the part of Massachusetts north of the Boston metropolitan area to the New Hampshire border. For reasons unknown and by routes unknown, GARDNER, as he was often called, showed up in Marblehead in 1784.

-

Chapter 12

MARBLEHEAD

In 1634 William Wood, in his New England Prospect, had written, "Marvill Head is a place which lieth four miles full south from Salem and is a very convenient place for plantation, especially for such as will set up the trade of fishing. There was made here a ship's loading of fish the last year, where still stands the stages and drying scaffolds. Here be good harbor for boats and safe riding for ships."

English fishermen had established temporary settlements at Marblehead as early as 1629, and by 1635 more permanent settlers arrived. These were, however, still mostly fishermen, many moving over from Salem to escape the strict Puritan theocracy. The feeling was apparently mutual, one history of Marblehead saying, "Few in the Puritan Massachusetts Bay Colony pretended to understand the fishing town populated by rugged, uneducated, unreligious fishermen and their equally sturdy wives".

Marblehead was officially separated from Salem on 12 December 1648. Although described by their Salem neighbors as "unreligious", the people of Marblehead did establish a church. The first minister was William Walton, whose annual salary for one of his first years there consisted of half a ton of fish.

And there were certain rules of decorum in church. In 1653 JOHN BENET was fined for "taking tobacco in the meeting house on the Lord's day". Five years later he and a Philip Deane were referred to the court for drunkenness, an offense for which he had once been fined before coming to Marblehead. Sometime between these two trips to court, BENET's daughter MARY married CHRISTOPHER CODNER.

CODNER was a fisherman who had come to New England in 1648 and to Marblehead the same year. In 1656 he purchased land on what was then called Codner Lane but was later renamed Rockaway Street. His daughter JEAN married JOSEPH BOOBYER, a variation of the name Bubier. In 1668 the inhabitants of Marblehead presented a Petition Against Imposts (customs duties) to the court at Boston, and BOOBYER was one of the signers. There is today a Bubier Road in Marblehead.

JEAN (CODNER) BOOBYER died in 1696, shortly after giving birth to a daughter MARY. Then, before MARY had reached the age of 12, her father also died. She was raised by a William Hewitt, who in 1707 deeded all his property to, "my loving maid Mary Boober of said Marblehead...aforesaid single woman whom I have brought up.....the said Mary Boober being the youngest daughter of Joseph Boober, late of Marblehead aforesaid, deceased."

That same year MARY married FRANCIS BOWDEN: and 67 years later, in 1774, their granddaughter, EUNICE BOWDEN, married GEORGE WHIPPEN, just in time for GEORGE to go off to war. Soon after the battles of Concord and Lexington, a Marblehead regiment was formed under the leadership of Colonel John Glover; and by June of 1775 this regiment consisted of ten companies with a total of 405 men. GEORGE WHIPPEN was in Captain Simonds' Company when, on June 22, 1775, the regiment marched to Cambridge to join General Ward's army, which was encircling the British at Bunker Hill.

GEORGE WHIPPEN remained in the army for most of the war, and it was 1783 before he and EUNICE had their first child, ELIZABETH. BETSY, as she was generally called, would marry into the Hathaway family in 1807.

* * *

Having come to Marblehead from Dartmouth, JOHN GARDNER HATHAWAY married ELEANOR STONE on 29 January 1784, the marriage being performed by Rev. Isaac Story. Story was pastor of the Second Congregational Church of Marblehead, a church with an interesting history. It was established by 124 members of the First Congregational Church who objected to the new minister called by that church. Rev. Story was its pastor from 1771 to 1802, being succeeded by Hezekiah May, who in turn was succeeded by Rev. John Bartlett in 1811. Bartlett endorsed the Unitarian movement, a majority of the members supported him, and the church has been the Unitarian Church ever since.

Despite what we have learned about the minister and his church, we have so far been unable to learn anything about the ancestry of JOHN GARDNER HATHAWAY's bride - ELEANOR, or POLLY as she was sometimes called. ELEANOR died in September of 1842; and shortly thereafter JOHN GARDNER deeded a cemetery plot to his remaining heirs, describing it as "...a parcel of land through which the Marblehead Rail Road runs and upon which my tomb is now asidescribed, and the land shall be used for the building of tombs; and as a burial ground for the heirs and families of the said John G. Hathaway". The tomb is near Village Street and Highland Terrace, and it was sealed in 1935 after it began to crumble.

JOHN GARDNER HATHAWAY died of cancer in April 1843. He and ELEANOR had had 12 children; the oldest, and the one who would continue the line to us, was of course named JOHN, the fifth John Hathaway in a row in our line of descent. It was this JOHN who married BETSY WHIPPEN, daughter of the Revolutionary soldier. JOHN was listed in the records as a laborer. He and his family moved to Beverly, where he died of consumption in 1849.

One of the children of JOHN and BETSY was EPHRAIM; and he married PAMELIA MARTIN, a sixth generation descendant of a very interesting lady.

-

Chapter 13

THE WITCH

The town of Salisbury, located in that narrow strip of Massachusetts between the mouth of the Merrimack River and the New Hampshire border, was founded in 1637. Among the early settlers were RICHARD and URSULA NORTH, JOHN HOYT and GEORGE and HANNAH MARTIN. MARTIN, a blacksmith, had arrived in New England about 1639 as a servant; but, despite this start and an inability to write, prospered and became a major land owner in the area. NORTH, listed as a planter, became involved in a variety of occupations. In 1643 he was chosen town cryer, field (cattle) driver and fence warden; and a 1647 town record shows that he was allowed "fivetic shillings for ringing the bell two years & a half past and twenty shillings to ring it one yeare more".

Another town record shows that in 1644 the estate of Widow Worthen was settled and her 8½ year old son EZEKIEL was put out as an apprentice to Thomas Abie until he reached the age of 20. In 1661, about five years after reaching that age, he married HANNAH MARTIN, daughter and apparently only child of GEORGE and HANNAH.

The elder HANNAH had died about 1645; and in August of 1646 GEORGE married SUSANNAH NORTH, daughter of RICHARD and URSULA. Most references to SUSANNAH give the impression that she was a good looking and rather free spirited woman who took pains to look neat, characteristics which in the long run would prove to be more troublesome than helpful. She was also actively engaged as a mother, she and GEORGE having eight children.

In 1654 the town of Salisbury was divided, the area west of the Powow River being set off as Amesbury. JOHN HOYT, GEORGE MARTIN and RICHARD NORTH were among those who signed the agreement for this separation. None of them could write, and they therefore made their marks: HOYT's was an H, MARTIN's a 7, and NORTH's an arc of a circle. GEORGE had already purchased ten acres on that side of the river in 1649.

In 1667 the town was officially named Amesbury. In July of that year a general meeting was held to assign seating in the new church; and a committee of nine men, including GEORGE MARTIN, was directed to, "apoint every man and woman in the towen there pertiecular seate to set in the meeten house acording to there best judgment, except the men wich the town themselves have plased....The 2 seates in the nor West side Georg Martyn and Nathan Gould are to set in...Good wiffe Martyn is to set in the 3 seate in the soweth west side of the metten house...Georg Martyn do enter his contry desent to the plasen of his wiffe in that seat.....Ezekiel

Worthenn....is to set in the 2 seate in the nor west side in the metten house".

GEORGE MARTIN died about 1686, and by the year 1692 his widow SUSANNAH was pretty much on her own, the children being grown to adulthood. Merrill's History of Amesbury says, "...the whole management of the farm fell upon her at a time when women's rights were but little respected. She was to some extent dependent upon her friends for labor, and thus came in contact with rough and sometimes uncivil persons, who would not have ventured to treat their male friends so ill".

On the 2nd of May in 1692 SUSANNAH was visited by Constable Bagley, who was carrying a warrant which read:

"To the Marshall of the County of Essex or his Lawful Deputies or to the Constable of Amesbury:

You are in their Majests names hereby required forthwith or as soon as may be to apprehend and bring (before us) Susanna Martin of Amesbury in ye county of Essex Widdow at ye house of Lt Nathaniel Ingersalls in Salem village in order to her examination Relating to high suspicion of sundry acts of Witchcraft donne or committed by her upon ye Bodys of Mary Walcot, Abigail Williams, Ann Putnam and Mercy Lewis of Salem village or farmes whereby great hurt and damage hath beene donne to ye bodys of said persons according to complt of Capt. Jonathan Walcot & Serg Thomas Putnam in behalf of their Majests this day exhibited before us for themselves and also for several of theire neighbors and here you are not to fail at your peril.

Dated Salem Aprill 30th 1692

John Hathorn

Jonathan Corwin - Assistants"

The warrant was later endorsed:

"according to the Warrant I have apprehended Susanna Martin Widow of Amesbury and have brong or caused her to be brought to the place appointed for her examination pr me

Salem village this 2d May 1692

Orlando Bagley

Connst. of Amesbury".

Who were these girls upon whose bodies great hurt and damage had been done, and how did SUSANNAH MARTIN get mixed up with them?

* * *

At the Salem town meeting of 7 May 1644 it was ordered, "that twoe be appointed every Lords day to walke forth in the time of Gods worshippe, to take notice of such as either lye about the meeting house without attending to the word or ordinances, or that lye at home or in the fields, without giving good account thereof, and to take the names of such

persons & to present them to the magistrate, whereby they may be accordingly proceeded against....John Putnam to work 9th Sunday with John Hathorne".

That order provides a good example of the ways in which the Puritan theocracy of the Massachusetts Bay Colony operated, and it also introduces us to some people who would be involved in future enforcement. PUTNAM had arrived in Salem in 1644, had been granted 100 acres at that time and at least 130 acres more over the next dozen years. Some of this land was adjacent to the lands of John Hathorne, whom we may recognize as one of the signers of the warrant for SUSANNAH MARTIN's arrest.

Among the children of JOHN and PRISCILLA PUTNAM were two sons: THOMAS, born in 1615 in England; and JOHN, 12 years younger. Much of the Putnam property was not in what we now know as Salem, but rather in what was then called Salem Village and is now the town of Danvers. The Putnam brothers were among the wealthiest people in the village. JOHN, who had been active in the militia and had fought in some battles against the Narragansett Indians, has been described as obstinate and arbitrary in his dealings with others. He had had all seven of his children baptized at the First Church in Salem in 1667, and 22 years later he was one of a group which formed a new church at Salem Village, later known as the North Parish of Danvers.

JOHN's older brother THOMAS had received land at Salem along with his father, but he lived in Lynn for several years before moving to Salem. He held many public offices, and in 1645 we find a town record saying, "Mr. Thomas Layghton, Edward Borcham & Thomas Putnam are appointed by this Courte to end smale causes for ye towne of Lynne for ye yeere ensewing". A year later this commission was renewed, "to end smale cawses under twenty shillings". This appears to have been one of our earlier small claims courts. He had two homes in Salem: one at Salem Village, described as being east of Hathorne's Hill; and an in-town residence on Essex Street in Salem.

THOMAS and Ann (Holyoke) PUTNAM were the grandparents of Ann Putnam, the supposed victim of SUSANNAH MARTIN's witchcraft. The Sergeant Thomas Putnam referred to in the arrest warrant was evidently Ann's father and the oldest son (fourth child) of THOMAS.

The new church in Salem Village, the one which JOHN PUTNAM helped establish, was not far from the site of the present Danvers State Hospital for mental patients. This seems like a fitting location, considering the 1692 events, described by Aldous Huxley as "Scholastically rationalized insanity". Rev. Samuel Parris, Pastor of this Salem Village church, had quit his theology courses at Harvard, gone to

Barbados to go into business, and had eventually returned to New England, bringing with him two slaves. One of these, a woman named Tituba, had been demonstrating Voodoo and other Caribbean "magic" to the pastor's 9 year old daughter and her 11 year old cousin Abigail Williams. During the winter of 1691-92 several other girls in town joined in. Some of these girls started acting strangely; and, when Dr. Griggs ruled out physical ailments, a group of clergymen got together and decided that the girls were being tormented by someone or something. The girls at first would not name anyone, so a list of likely suspects was drawn up. Tituba headed the list, followed by Sarah Good, the pipe smoking wife of a drifter, and Sarah Osborne. On leap year day a warrant was issued for their arrest, and they were put in the Ipswich jail. John Hathorne and Jonathan Corwin, assistants to the Colonial Court, were appointed to conduct the preliminary examination, which was held before a large crowd at Ingersoll's Ordinary (inn/tavern). All three women were sent to prison in Boston pending trial.

Ann Putnam, THOMAS' granddaughter, and Abigail Williams apparently thought this was exciting and started naming other witches. The common practice during examinations was for the girls to fall down and take fits when the alleged witches came in, then resume normal behavior when the suspects touched them.

Rev. George Burroughs, formerly the minister of the Salem church, was somehow labelled as the head witch, although he was at the time in Maine. He was dragged out of his home in Wells and taken to Salem. JOHN PUTNAM, JR., who supposedly had influence over the marshall, is reputed to have been responsible for having Rev. Burroughs locked up.

Not all the Putnams saw this witchcraft hysteria in the same light however. JOSEPH PUTNAM was the only child of THOMAS and his second wife, the widow MARY Veren; and he was strongly opposed to the witchcraft trials. This stand made him quite unpopular with many of his relatives and with the citizenry in general. Not only was his step-brother's daughter one of the principal accusers, but his wife's uncle was John Hathorne, one of the witchcraft judges. JOSEPH felt threatened, and for six months he kept a horse saddled and ready to go.

SUSANNAH MARTIN arrived for her "examination" very neatly dressed, and one bit of "evidence" presented was that she had gone from Amesbury to Newburyport to visit a friend in very wet and dirty weather and had arrived with her clothes perfectly dry and clean. Her initial response to the girls' accusations was, "Well may I laugh at such folly". She apparently thought the whole thing was foolish, as we think today; unfortunately many responsible officials and much of the public did not see it that way. Cotton Mather's

description of the trials, which started on 2 June, included the opinion that, "there was little occasion to prove the witchcraft, this being evident and notorious to all beholders"

Bridget Bishop was the first to be tried, before a panel of seven judges with Deputy Governor William Stoughton presiding. She was found guilty and sentenced to be hanged. However, execution of the sentence was delayed a few days until the General Court could revive an old colonial law making witchcraft a capital offense. The second trial, convened on 28 June, had four defendants: Rebecca Nurse, Sarah Good, Sarah Wild and SUSANNAH MARTIN.

The evidence, if you can call it that, presented against SUSANNAH included testimony that:

Fourteen of John Allen's oxen in Salisbury had swum to Plum Island, When he tried to round them up all but one ran away, plunged into the water and headed to sea where they drowned. Allen, trying to figure out why this had happened, remembered that before that he had refused to hitch his oxcart to haul some wood for SUSANNAH, whereupon she had said, "Your oxen will never do you much service".

John Kemple had argued with her about buying some puppies and she had said, "I'll give you puppies enough". Then on his way home he was beset by lots of puppies which then suddenly disappeared.

She assumed shapes. John Presey said she appeared to him as "a marvelous light about the bigness of a half bushel". She had also been seen as a bird and as a cat.

She molested men in their bedchambers, climbing in the window and getting into bed.

She had enslaved John Ring and dragged him to witch meetings.

All this was sufficient for a finding of guilty, and SUSANNAH (NORTH) MARTIN was hanged on the 19th of July 1692.

By May of 1693 reason returned to the courts, and they began to acquit most of the defendants. However, many of them had to remain in prison because they could not afford to pay for their room and board for the period of pre-trial imprisonment. The average charge for this was two shillings and six pence per week.

The Salem witchcraft trials, probably the most widely known part of that town's history, had lasted only one year.

Many of the descendants of GEORGE and SUSANNAH MARTIN

remained in Amesbury and married descendants of other early settlers. RICHARD MARTIN, their oldest child, married widow MARY (HOYT) Bartlett; and their son JOHN married, in 1702, MARY WELLS, daughter of JOHN WELLS and probably the granddaughter of original settler Richard Wells. MARY's mother, MARY (GREENLEAF) WELLS, was the granddaughter of EDMUND GREENLEAF, a dyer from Ipswich, England who had been one of the original settlers of the Massachusetts town of the same name.

Earlier we mentioned that EZEKIEL WORTHEN had married HANNAH MARTIN, the only child of GEORGE and his first wife. They had a son GEORGE. It was customary at that time for the elderly poor to be boarded out to local citizens, with the town paying the bill. GEORGE WORTHEN in 1748 received 11 shillings, 6 pence per week for boarding widow Hookly, and 12 shillings per week for keeping Hannah Bethel. There is no explanation as to why Hannah's keep was a half shilling more expensive.

17 years before that. GEORGE WORTHEN's daughter DEBORAH had married JONATHAN MARTIN, the son of JOHN and MARY (WELLS) MARTIN. Thus, AQUILA MARTIN, son of JONATHAN and DEBORAH, was descended from GEORGE MARTIN and both of his wives.

AQUILA had a son named AQUILA, and it is difficult to tell which one of them is being referred to in various records. In 1804 Amesbury assessed a school district tax of \$307.23 to pay for a new school house, and we find that AQUILA MARTIN's share was \$13.66. In June of 1812, as war was declared against Great Britain, we find the name of AQUILA MARTIN, JR. on the roster of the first engine men. This may have been a military outfit or just part of the local fire department.

This AQUILA MARTIN, JR. married EUNICE JOSLYN, from a family which apparently had earlier been in the Pembroke-Hanover area south of Boston. It was their daughter PAMELIA who married EPHRAIM HATHAWAY, grandson of JOHN GARDNER HATHAWAY.

What about the Putnams? JOSEPH, who had made himself very unpopular by opposing the witchcraft trials, evidently had other differences with the family. He was, as we have noted, the only son of THOMAS by his second wife, the widow MARY Veren. MARY had inherited property in Jamaica and Barbados, thus adding to the family holdings. JOSEPH may have been the beneficiary of much of this; there are indications that THOMAS' children by his first wife tried unsuccessfully to break his will.

JOSEPH and ELIZABETH (PORTER) PUTNAM had 11 children plus twins who died young. Among these 11 were SARAH, who

married ELEAZAR BROWN. ELEAZAR was the son of HENRY and HANNAH (PUTNAM) BROWN and therefore the grandson of the JOHN PUTNAM who had supposedly put Rev. Burroughs in jail. (That explains why we have been keeping track of both THOMAS and JOHN PUTNAM).

JOSEPH and ELIZABETH were also the parents of Israel Putnam, who became General Israel Putnam of the Continental Army in the Revolutionary War. General Putnam's forces operated mainly in Connecticut and probably included in their numbers some of our Beebe line ancestors.

SARAH BROWN, daughter of ELEAZAR and SARAH (PUTNAM) BROWN was baptized in 1738. She was descended from Putnams who had been on both sides of the witch controversy. In 1764 she married JOHN BUSHBY, the first Bushby about whom we know anything. Their great-great granddaughter, SARAH (ABBOT) BUSHBY would marry CHARLES WILLARD HATHAWAY, son of EPHRAIM and a 7th generation descendant of SUSANNAH (NORTH) MARTIN. We trust that CHARLES and SARAH never traced their ancestry back to 1692.

-

Chapter 14

MARY ABBOT WROUGHT THIS

The town of Andover, Massachusetts was settled in 1641 or 1642, the early settlers including John Osgood, MARK GRAVES, WILLIAM CHANDLER and GEORGE ABBOT. ABBOT had been in Roxbury for a short time before moving to the new town; and a few years after coming to Andover he married CHANDLER's daughter HANNAH.

(This GEORGE ABBOT should not be confused with another George Abbot, who had come to Andover from Rowley.)

As was the case in most 17th century New England towns, a few houses in Andover were designated and used as garrison houses - that is, they were well constructed of sturdy logs and had sentinel boxes at the corners. GEORGE ABBOT's house was one of these. In a previous chapter we noted the start of King Philip's War and the attack on Dartmouth in the summer of 1675. Most of the towns in northern Massachusetts were not attacked until 1676. On the 18th of April that year the Indians attacked Andover. The attack seemed to be aimed at ABBOT's house, possibly because it was a garrison house or possibly because his son Joseph had been a member of a force which had raided the Narragansetts and killed one member of that tribe. Joseph and his brother TIMOTHY were at work in the fields when the attack commenced and did not make it back to the garrison. Joseph was killed, and TIMOTHY was taken prisoner. In August TIMOTHY was returned, safe and sound, by a friendly squaw; and 13 years later he married MARK GRAVES' daughter HANNAH.

GEORGE and HANNAH had 11 other children, including another Joseph and a JOHN. Both JOHN and TIMOTHY are in our ancestral line, as JOHN's granddaughter ELIZABETH would marry TIMOTHY's grandson ASA. ASA's mother was a Foster, a descendant of two of the early families of Ipswich.

* * *

RICHARD KIMBALL, from Suffolk County, England, arrived in America in the early 1630's with seven children. They first settled on 6 acres on the Watertown - Cambridge line, near what is now the corner of Huron Ave. and Appleton St. in Cambridge. He was a wheelwright, a trade which the new settlers of Ipswich needed; and he was therefore invited to move to that community, which gave him a house lot. As a wheelwright, he was one of the few people authorized to cut down white oak trees.

He acquired more land, including 43 shares in Plum Island and 40 acres adjacent to land of Robert Scott. KIMBALL's first wife was URSULA SCOTT, and in Chapter 3 we met

a RICHARD SCOTT of Ipswich - the one who got lost in the woods and married Anne Hutchinson's sister. No definite connection is known, but it is quite likely that all these Ipswich Scotts were of the same family.

RICHARD KIMBALL's will is a good example of the way in which our colonial ancestors often spelled out their wishes in detail. It reads in part, "...To my Loveinge wife my will is that she shall dwell in my house and have the Improvement of my ground and meadow belonging thereto with the use and increase of my whole stand of cattle, one whole yeare after my decease, and then at the years end, the forty pound due her acording to contract at marriage to be payed her and that house-hold stuff she brought with her. And to have liberty to live in the parlor end of the house, the rooms we now lodge in; and liberty for her necessary vse of some part of sella; also the liberty of one cow in the pasture, the executors to provide winter meals for the same, and to have a quarter part of the fruit of the orchard, and firewood as long as she lives there. And if she desire to remove to her owne house, then to be sett in it with what she have by my executors and to be alowed forty shillings yearly as long as she lives."

The mention of a "contract at marriage" seems to imply some sort of pre-nuptial agreement. The wife in this case is probably not URSULA, but more likely RICHARD's second wife, the widow Margaret Dow, who may have brought with her some of the inheritance from her first marriage.

RICHARD KIMBALL, JR. had come from England with his father, and about 1653 he had moved from Ipswich to Wenham. A wheelwright like his father, he became the largest taxpayer in Wenham. Municipal taxes may have been paid in cash, but that was not the only medium of exchange. In 1657 RICHARD, JR. subscribed three pounds to the minister's salary, half of it to be paid in wheat and half in Indian corn.

RICHARD, JR.'s granddaughter SARAH married WILLIAM FOSTER, great grandson of REGINALD FOSTER, another of the early settlers of Ipswich. Ministers were not the only leaders for whose support money was specifically subscribed; in 1645 we find REGINALD FOSTER subscribing 3 shillings toward the 24 pounds and 7 shillings needed to pay Major Dennison, who commanded the militia of Essex and Norfolk Counties. That same year a law was passed requiring, "Youth from ten to sixteen years to be exercised with small guns, half pikes, bows and arrows", and also that, "every town is to have a guard set a half hour after sunset, to consist of a pikeman and musketeer, and to prepare for any sudden attack from the Indians".

Among the youths from ten to sixteen years was WILLIAM

FOSTER, REGINALD's son. WILLIAM later moved to Rowley Village, which became Boxford; and where, in 1677 and 1680 he and John Peabody were appointed to enforce strict obedience of the Sabbath "and to have special inspection of those families nearest their house on either side of them".

WILLIAM FOSTER's son WILLIAM, JR. moved to Andover in 1697 or '98, and it is his daughter MARY who married TIMOTHY ABBOT, JR, son of the TIMOTHY who had been captured by the Indians. WILLIAM FOSTER, JR. was a weaver, and he gave a loom to his son Asa. There were no Asa's in the Abbot family as far as we know, so it is likely that when TIMOTHY and MARY named their second son ASA, he was named for this uncle.

* * *

"Listen, my children, and you shall hear
Of the midnight ride of Paul Revere,
On the eighteenth of April, in Seventy-five;
Hardly a man is now alive
Who remembers that famous day and year".

That ride, memorialized by Henry Wadsworth Longfellow, occurred 99 years to the day after TIMOTHY ABBOT was captured, and his brother Joseph killed, by the Indians; and at least three of the sons of ASA and ELIZABETH ABBOT responded to the alarm. NATHAN and Asa are reported to have marched to meet the British on the 19th, although we don't know the extent of their activity in the battles of Concord and Lexington. Their brother Caleb is listed as a minuteman and also as a participant in the Battle of Bunker Hill. There was also a Nathan Abbot, probably our NATHAN, in Capt. Peabody's Company at Dorchester Heights in 1776.

Hanging on our wall is a sampler, which reads:

"A Family Record

-	
Mr. Nathan Abbot	born Nov 18, 1756
Mrs. Margaret Abbot	born Sep 25, 1760
Miss Elizabeth Abbot	born Feb 24, 1786
Miss Martha Abbot	born Jan 19, 1788
Mr. Nathan Abbot	born Feb 7, 1790
Miss Lydia Abbot	born Aug 9, 1792
Miss Sophronia Abbot	born Jan 20, 1795
Miss Judith Abbot	born May 14, 1797
Miss Asenath Abbot	born June 17, 1801
Miss Mary Abbot	born Aug 15, 1805

-

Mary Abbot Wrought
this AD 1817 Age 12 years.
My friends who are of life possessed
This work may see when I'm at rest."

MARY ABBOT grew up and found other activities. On February 24, 1830 she married HENRY BUSHBY, and one month later she gave birth to their first son, HENRY BUSHBY, JR. (The Bushby Family Bible gives the birth date as March 3, but the Danvers vital records show March 24. That same Bible, however, says MARY was born in 1804, rather than 1805 as MARY herself wrote on the sampler and as the records confirm).

In the preceding chapter we mentioned that the first Bushby about whom we know anything was JOHN, who married SARAH BROWN, descended from the Putnams. Actually there was a Nicholas Bushby who came from England and lived in Newbury and Watertown for a while in the 1630's. However, as far as we know his only sons returned to England and never came back, so we can't trace much back to him.

JOHN BUSHBY's son ASA married LYDIA WILLSON, who may have been the sister of the MARGARET (WILLSON) ABBOT who was MARY ABBOT's mother. LYDIA's mother was LYDIA (BANCROFT), descended from the Bancroft, Breed and Newhall families of Lynn.

Back to HENRY BUSHBY, JR., first son of HENRY and MARY (ABBOT). The Salem Gazette for Tuesday morning, June 1, 1852 contains an announcement of the marriage of Mr. HENRY BUSHBY, JR. to Miss GRACE WILLIAMS on Sunday evening at South Church. Sunday would have been May 31, and on that date the family Bible agrees. Unfortunately, however, we know next to nothing about GRACE. The Bible record says GRACE BUSHBY was born May 11, 1831, and the Danvers vital records show a Grace Williams born May 10, 1821 in England.

Whoever GRACE (WILLIAMS) BUSHBY may have been, she and HENRY, JR. had five children, the middle one being SARAH ABBOT BUSHBY, who married CHARLES WILLARD HATHAWAY. Their only child, HENRY BUSHBY HATHAWAY would marry DORIS SNOW BRIGGS.

-

PART V

Little Rhody

The Briggs line: the ancestry of Luella Erminie Snow and Charles Edmund Briggs, who were married in 1890 at Providence, Rhode Island and were the parents of Doris Snow (Briggs) Hathaway and Helen Harriett Briggs. These ancestors were all from Rhode Island and a few neighboring towns of Connecticut and Massachusetts.

Rhode Island is a state of extremes: the smallest area, the longest official name, first colony to declare independence from Britain, and last of the 13 original colonies to ratify the U.S. Constitution. Our ancestors were very much a part of the situations and events which contributed to these extremes.

Chapter 15

AQUIDNECK ISLAND

In 1636 Roger Williams, an exile from the Massachusetts Bay Colony, founded a colony at Providence. Two years later Anne Hutchinson, John Clarke and William Coddington led another group of Boston area dissidents in founding another colony at Pocasset Neck, on the northern end of Aquidneck Island in Narragansett Bay. Among the other original settlers were RICHARD BORDEN, JOHN COGGESHALL, NICHOLAS EASTON, GEORGE GARDINER, THOMAS HAZARD, and NATHANIEL POTTER. Other early, but possibly not original, settlers included JEREMIAH and FRANCES (LATHAM) CLARKE, John and HERODIAS (LONG) Hicks and GEORGE LAWTON.

One of the first rules of this new colony, which soon was named Portsmouth, stated that, "noe person within the said Colonye, at any time hereafter, shall be in any wise molested, disquieted or called in question on matters of religion - so long as he keep the peace". However, these were people who had left England and later the Massachusetts Bay Colony because of disagreements over religion and/or politics; and it would be unrealistic to expect that they could all agree on how best to run things in Portsmouth. So, a year after settling at Portsmouth, some of them headed on down the island and established a new settlement at Newport.

In April 1639 nine men signed the following compact: "It is agreed by us whose hands are underwritten, to propagate a plantation in the midst of the island, or elsewhere, and to engage ourselves to bear equal charge, answerable to our strength and estates in common;; and that our determination shall be by major voices of Judge and Elders, the judge to have a double voice". William Coddington was made judge, and JEREMIAH CLARKE and JOHN COGGESHALL signed as elders. Other signers included NICHOLAS EASTON and THOMAS HAZARD.

Who were these people? We met COGGESHALL and EASTON in Chapter 3, as they were incurring the wrath of Governor Winthrop. Four years after settling at Newport, EASTON's son PETER would marry COGGESHALL's daughter ANN. HAZARD was a ship carpenter, who in 1636 had come to America and joined the First Church of Boston. After arriving at Newport he was given the job of laying out lots.

JEREMIAH CLARKE, or JEREMY as he was often called, is not as well known as his wife FRANCES. She was the daughter of LEWIS LATHAM, an English falcon trainer. He had been under-falconer to Charles, Prince of Wales who, when he became King Charles I, retained his falconers and in 1627 promoted LEWIS to Sergeant Falconer. By that time FRANCES

was married to WILLIAM DUNGAN. He died in 1636, leaving her with four children; and not too long after that she married JEREMIAH CLARKE and came to America.

Another original settler, although a minor at the time, was JAMES BARKER. He had come to America in 1634 with his father on the same ship with EASTON. His father died during the passage and left JAMES in the care of his aunt Christiana. She married NICHOLAS EASTON, as his second wife, in 1638; so JAMES evidently grew up in the Easton household. In 1644 he married BARBARA DUNGAN, one of FRANCES (LATHAM) CLARKE's four children by her first marriage.

Also in 1644 the name of the island was changed from Aquidneck to Rhode Island. There are at least two theories concerning the origin of this name. Giovanni de Verrazano, who supposedly sailed this coast in 1511, had written of an island that resembled the island of Rhodes. And 103 years later the Dutch navigator Adrian Block had referred to an island in Narragansett Bay as Roodt Eylandt, or Red Island.

Another, much smaller, island had been named by PETER EASTON in May of 1639 as he was sailing down from Portsmouth to his new home at Newport. He and his companions gave the name Coasters' Harbor Island to the small island at the north end of Newport Harbor which still has that name and is home to the U.S. Naval War College. PETER served the new town in many capacities including commissioner, general treasurer, attorney general and overseer of the poor. His son NICHOLAS married ELIZABETH BARKER, oldest child of JAMES and BARBARA (DUNGAN).

* * *

The Rhode Island colonies were tolerant of religious practices and therefore attracted members of such "outlaw" sects as Baptists and Quakers. Some of these people, however, occasionally returned to Massachusetts, where they were not at all well treated.

OBADIAH HOLMES, who had arrived at Salem from Lancaster County, England sometime prior to 1639, was a glassman, meaning that he was a manufacturer of glass. In HOLMES' case this meant window glass; and there must have been a big demand for it in Salem because in 1641 Salem glassmen could obtain a loan of 30 pounds from the town, to be repaid, "if the works succeed, when they are able".

OBADIAH may have made enough money to retire, but it is more likely that his Baptist beliefs were so unpopular with the Salem authorities that he had to leave. In 1646 he moved to Rehoboth, part of the Plymouth Colony but close to Providence; and by 1650 he was before the grand jury for meeting "house to house" on Sunday. He and eight others

separated from the church and were baptized as adults. With OBADIAH as pastor, this group then left Rehoboth for Newport.

In July of 1651 he showed up in Lynn, where he was seized and fined 30 pounds, a sizeable sum in those days. He defaulted on the fine, was whipped, imprisoned in Boston until September, and whipped again. He returned to Newport, where he served as pastor of the First Baptist Church for 30 years until his death in 1682. His son JONATHAN, who served as Speaker of the House of Deputies for seven years, married RICHARD BORDEN's daughter; and their daughter would marry PETER EASTON's grandson NICHOLAS.

OBADIAH was a Baptist. We may recall from Chapter 3 that Anne Hutchinson's sister, CATHERINE SCOTT, had talked Roger Williams into becoming a Baptist; and Williams had then started the first Baptist church in America. SCOTT and her husband RICHARD later went to what was then considered an even more radical extreme - they became Quakers.

The SCOTTs had two sons and four daughters, and CATHERINE and two of the daughters ventured back to Boston to protest that colony's treatment of Quakers. CATHERINE was whipped and imprisoned in 1658, and the following year daughter Patience was imprisoned. Another daughter, Mary, was imprisoned while visiting her husband, Christopher Holder, who had had his right ear cut off for the crime of being a Quaker. Holder was one of the most prominent Quakers of the time; and we may recall that "BULL" SMITH had been arrested at Boston when he arrived at that port on the same ship with Holder. The SCOTTs had two other daughters, HANNAH and Deliverance, whose adventures with religion are not known.

We are concerned, in this chapter, with six generations of Eastons, several of whom became involved with these Baptist and Quaker families. NICHOLAS (son of PETER, grandson of the first NICHOLAS), included in his will, "...to Christopher Holder and Uncle John Easton: a small lot and house for people called Quakers; to Christopher Holder: a barrel of pork to be disposed of to help fence the place where wife was buried; to poor Quakers: L20 ; to Indian squaw: her freedom, and Indian child and negro to be free at age of 25".

That NICHOLAS EASTON's son was also named NICHOLAS, and he married MARY HOLMES, OBADIAH's granddaughter. Their son JONATHAN married a descendant of the Scotts.

* * *

In 1644 the Aquidneck Colony was united with Providence and another settlement at Warwick by a charter issued to

Providence Plantations. (That was, as we have noted earlier, the same year that the name of Aquidneck was changed to Rhode Island, but it would be 19 more years before a new charter was issued to Rhode Island and Providence Plantations). JEREMIAH CLARKE was treasurer of the Newport Colony from that year until 1647, when he became treasurer of the new Providence Plantations. The following year Governor William Coddington was suspended from office until some charges (details not known) against him could be cleared up; and CLARKE was elected to replace him. After 1649 he held no public offices: but he had started a family tradition of public service. His wife, FRANCES (LATHAM) has been called the "Mother of Governors"; between 1676 and 1880 eleven of her descendants served as Governor of Rhode Island. From our point of view she is also distinguished by the fact that we claim her as an ancestor through two of her three husbands. (After WILLIAM DUNGAN and JEREMIAH CLARKE, she married Rev. William Vaughan, a Baptist minister.)

The first of the governors was her son WALTER CLARKE, who was Governor for six years and a Deputy Governor for 23 more. In business he owned a boat, the town wharf, and a slaughterhouse. Married four times, his second wife was HANNAH SCOTT, one of CATHERINE's daughters. Their daughter HANNAH married into the Rodman family, which had come to Newport from Barbados.

In 1627 the English had settled on the island of Barbados, the easternmost island in the West Indies. In earlier chapters we have mentioned Henry Winthrop, who had tried to make his fortune there but returned to England and married ELIZABETH FONES; MICAHAH SNOW, who had been engaged in trade between the island and Massachusetts; and Rev. Samuel Parris, who had returned from Barbados to Salem with the slave who was really the start of the Salem witch fiasco. Somewhat more permanent and successful on the island was JOHN RODMAN, a planter and member of Christ Church Parish.

Both of JOHN's sons, THOMAS and John, became physicians and came to Newport. THOMAS was a Quaker and for 30 years served as clerk of the meetings of the Society of Friends in Rhode Island. His first wife is unknown, but his second was the widow Patience (Easton) Malines, daughter of PETER. She died at the age of 35 on 27 November 1690. After allowing exactly one year to pass, he then married HANNAH CLARKE on 26 November 1691.

Their daughter, PATIENCE RODMAN, became the wife of JONATHAN EASTON and the mother of MARY, the last Easton in our line. She would marry a man from across the bay but whose family had started out on Aquidneck.

* * *

HERODIAS LONG was born somewhere in England about the year 1623. Several years later her father died, and her mother brought her to London where, in March 1637 at the age of 13 or 14, she was married to John Hicks. That same year they came to America and settled briefly at Weymouth, just south of Boston. In 1638 they were among the many who moved south to Aquidneck Island and settled at Portsmouth and Newport.

Another early settler of Newport was GEORGE GARDINER, who arrived in Boston in 1637 and Portsmouth in 1638. His first wife, by whom he had one son Benoni, was not with him; and we assume she had died before or during his trip. GEORGE was admitted as a freeman in Newport in December of 1639, by March of 1640 he owned 58 acres, and in 1642 he was elected Constable and made Sergeant of the Newport Train Band. (As previously explained, a train band was a militia unit in training). At some time between then and 1645 GEORGE met HERODIAS LONG.

HERODIAS and John Hicks evidently had their problems. In January 1645 John was in court for beating his wife and was bound for ten pounds and "to continue bound until his wife should come and give evidence concerning the matter". This apparently never happened, and that's the last of John Hicks in Rhode Island records. He moved to Long Island; and in October 1645 he was designated by the Dutch Governor to be one of the patentees to settle the town of Flushing. This is probably the same John Hicks who, along with JOHN UNDERHILL and WILLIAM LAWRENCE, was sued in 1664 by Elias Doughty, seeking to recover some back salary due his father.

In December 1645 Hicks wrote to JOHN COGGESHALL at Newport about divorcing HERODIAS, who had remained there. This letter said in part, "Now for parting what way there is seeing she have carried the matter so subtilly as she have I know nt, but if there be anyway to bee used to untie that knott, wch was at first by man tyed that so the world may be satisfied I am willing thereunto, for the knot of affection on her part have been untied long since, and her whoredom have freed my conscience on the other part, so I leave myself to yor advice being free to condissend to yor advice if ther may be such a way used for the final parting for us".

Ten years later Governor Peter Stuyvesant granted Hicks a divorce in the New Amsterdam court. However, there is a record showing that HERODIAS had already obtained a divorce from Hicks in Newport. At any rate she went to live with GEORGE GARDINER, and about 1645 they had a son HENRY. She became a Quaker; and in 1658 she walked from Newport to Weymouth, apparently to a Quaker meeting, carrying a nursing baby and accompanied only by a girl named Mary Stanton. For this she was whipped "ten stripes" by order of Governor Endicott.

HERODIAS and GEORGE never were legally married; but Robert Stanton, a Newport Quaker and probably Mary's father, testified that, "one night being at his house both of them did say before him and his wife that they did take one the other as man and wife". Married or not, in 1664 HERODIAS petitioned for a separation from GEORGE. On 3 May 1665 the General Assembly decreed the separation, stating in part, "...that although she had lived for a long space of time with the aforesaid Gardener, as in a married estate, and had owned him as her lawful husband, yett she was never lawfully married to him, neither could owne him in such a relation, and soe consequently that she had lived all this time in that abominable lust of fornication, contrary to the generall apprehension of her neighbors, she having had by the aforesaid Gardener many children...". They were each fined 20 pounds and ordered henceforth, "not to lead soe scandolose a life, lest they feel the extremist penalty..".

GEORGE and HERODIAS are believed to have had six children; and their descendants include succesful Newport merchants, a Lieutenant Governor of Rhode Island, and a member of the Continental Congress.

Not too long after the separation GEORGE GARDINER married Lydia Ballou of Portsmouth, and HERODIAS married John Porter of Pettaquamscutt. This is an area on the west side of Narragansett Bay including parts of the present towns of North and South Kingstown and Narragansett. Porter had been one of the original purchasers of this area, and it appears that he had moved there and left his wife Margaret back in Newport. For at the same sitting of the General Assembly which considered the separation of GEORGE and HERODIAS, Margaret Porter appeared and requested that her husband be made to support her. He did then provide for her, they were granted a divorce, and he married HERODIAS. In her statement to the General Assembly on 3 May HERODIAS had said that she then lived at "Pettycomscutt", so it appears that she may have already left GEORGE and followed Porter across the bay.

The four sons of GEORGE and HERODIAS - George, HENRY, Nicholas and William - and Benoni, his son by his first wife, all moved across the bay to Pettaquamscutt; and at least two of them received land from John and HERODIAS Porter. HENRY has been described as the owner of a "large landed estate at Pettaquamscutt".

HENRY GARDINER appears to have inherited his parents' casual attitude regarding marriage and children. His first wife was named Joan, last name unknown; but while still married to her he allegedly fathered two children born to a lady whose own parents were rather interesting characters.

EDWARD RICHMOND had lived all over southern Rhode Island; born in Newport, he had eventually owned property in Westerly, East Greenwich and Little Compton. He served as a Lieutenant in King Philip's War, and he and his company were on record as having killed seven Indians in 1676. From 1677 to 1680 RICHMOND was Attorney General, evidently succeeding PETER EASTON in that post. His relationships with both the law and the Indians must have changed over the years, as six years after leaving public office he was fined five pounds for providing rum to the Indians.

EDWARD's wife was the former ABIGAIL DAVIS. In 1657 she had petitioned the Assembly to declare her previous marriage to one Richard Ussell invalid because she had been forced into it by her parents when she really wanted to marry EDWARD. The petition was granted, she and EDWARD were married, and they had eight children. The eldest daughter, also named ABIGAIL, married John Remington in 1679.

Remington died, and ABIGAIL became very friendly with HENRY GARDINER, hopefully in that order. However, the dates available from family and town records leave the sequence of other events a little cloudy. In 1694 ABIGAIL appeared in court charging that HENRY, who was still married to Joan, was the father of two of her children. The court ordered HENRY to indemnify Kings Town for any charges, presumably those incurred in raising the children. After Joan died, about 1715, he recognized ABIGAIL as his wife, and she is a beneficiary of his will.

ABIGAIL is listed as being the mother of all four of HENRY GARDINER's children, including Henry and EPHRAIM, born in 1691 and 1693 respectively. It appears that we have here either some inaccurate records or the ingredients for a good novel.

One of HENRY GARDINER's grandsons would, in 1753, go back across the bay and marry MARY EASTON.

-

Chapter 16

WHAT STATE ARE WE IN?

ROBERT PARKE - the one whose letter to John Winthrop we quoted in Chapter 3, and who came to America with Winthrop in 1630 - settled for a short while in Roxbury and then moved to Wethersfield, Connecticut. There he married the widow Alice Thompson, and his son THOMAS married Alice's daughter DOROTHY. Then, about 1650 the whole family moved to the Pequot Plantation at the mouth of the Thames River.

This Pequot Plantation became the city of New London. It was within the limits of the Saybrook Colony, established by Governor Winthrop's son, John, Jr., with a patent granting it all the land from Narragansett Bay in Rhode Island westward to the Pacific Ocean. It is doubtful that any of these settlers knew or cared how far it was to the Pacific Ocean, but they did know of the Connecticut colonies to their west; and in 1644 one of Winthrop's aides, George Fenwick, sold the Saybrook colony to Connecticut. There was still, however, the potential of conflict with the Rhode Island settlements to the east.

Most of the New London settlers came from towns north of Boston. THOMAS MINER had come to America and settled at Salem in 1629, one year before PARKE, Winthrop and party had established the Massachusetts Bay Colony. He moved around a lot, living at three or four other towns near Boston before moving down to New London. The first minister for the church at New London was Richard Blinman, who came down from Gloucester. There was no meeting house at first, so services were held in ROBERT PARKE's home at the corner of Hempstead and Granite Streets. Coming with Rev. Blinman from Gloucester were JAMES and JOANNA AVERY, whose daughter HANNAH married MINER's son EPHRAIM. Among the other early New London settlers were JAMES BEEBE's brothers John and Samuel.

JAMES AVERY owned land in New London at the corner of New Street and Cape Ann Lane, the latter obviously being named for the location of their earlier home at Gloucester. JAMES was active in civil and military affairs in the New London area. In 1657 his troop rescued Uncas, the Mohican, from the Narragansetts. Then, during King Philip's War he led a group of 40 English and Pequots against the Narragansetts in the Great Swamp fight at Kingston, Rhode Island.

In 1652 JAMES AVERY obtained a farm in South Groton, across the river from New London. This is probably what is known as Avery Point, for many years the site of a U.S. Coast Guard training center. Also, on route US-1 at the site of his 1656 homestead, is a memorial to Captain JAMES AVERY, erected by his descendants, one of whom was John D. Rockefeller.

Some of the New Londoners began to move slowly eastward. In 1652 William Chesebrough, Thomas Stanton, THOMAS MINER and WALTER PALMER (MINER's father-in-law) founded the town of Stonington. This town, across the Pawcatuck River from Westerly, Rhode Island, included what is now the village of Mystic. MINER was a leader of the militia in Mystic and served as a Deputy from Stonington for ten years. In 1656 both ROBERT and THOMAS PARKE and their families moved to Mystic, and both father and son served as selectmen of the town of Stonington.

THOMAS WHEELER arrived in Stonington in 1667 from Lynn, where he had operated a saw mill and grist mill; and seven years later he was one of the nine organizers of the First Congregational Church of Stonington. His son ISAAC married THOMAS PARKE's daughter MARTHA.

Among the ten children of ISAAC and MARTHA (PARKE) WHEELER were Thomas, who was killed by Indians while bear hunting, and another ISAAC. This ISAAC married an ambitious lady named MARY SHEPARD, daughter and granddaughter of Puritan pastors. Her grandfather, THOMAS SHEPARD, had come from England with two degrees from Immanuel College and had been praised by Cotton Mather as being, "...as great a convertor of souls as has ordinarily been known in our days". Her father, JEREMIAH SHEPARD, was a Harvard graduate who had prepared for the ministry and preached some, although he apparently was never ordained. Although both the Wheelers and Shepards had been in Lynn, there is no indication that JEREMIAH ever left there, nor do we know how MARY ever got to Stonington and met ISAAC.

A history of Stonington has this to say about ISAAC and MARY:

"Isaac Wheeler erected him a house in Stonington on land given him by his grandfather, Thomas Wheeler, where he brought his bride on their wedding trip, and commenced life at farming. But his wife aspired to a more active business life, and to gratify her wishes he changed and enlarged his house, making it two stories on the south, and one on the north, with show windows on the west, which were utilized for a variety store by Madam Wheeler, who became the leading merchant of the town, buying all the surplus farm products of the region round about, which she sent to Boston and the West Indies for a market, in exchange for goods necessary for the planters of the town. Alone she made equestrian trips to Boston, where she purchased her dry goods. She was not only the leading merchant of the town, but her mansion house was the center of all the neighborhood families. Her store was not only a place of business, but a political center, where slates were made for all the offices of the town. She became wealthy, and at her death was the richest woman of the county. They both united with the First

Congregational Church in 1697 and were active and useful members".

MARY died in 1761 at the age of 83. Their son THOMAS, married to MARY MINER, has been referred to as one of the wealthiest men of his day. What did these terms mean - how wealthy were these people? A look at the inventory of this THOMAS WHEELER's property, taken in 1755 when he died, gives a good idea. This inventory included many items of clothing and furniture, but of particular note are the following living creatures:

- 18 horses, with individual values up to 16 pounds;
- 5 oxen;
- 34 cows;
- 74 cattle;
- 1 bull;
- 25 calves;
- 129 sheep;
- 5 rams;
- 121 swine;
- also:

12 negros, 2 mulattos and 1 Indian, referred to as slaves and servants and valued between 41 pounds for the negro man Cab to one pound for the Indian woman.

His will left 2,000 pounds and a negro girl named Joanna to his daughter, MEHITABLE BABCOCK.

* * *

Back on Aquidneck Island, in May of 1650 JAMES BADCOCK and five others were ordered by the General Court of Rhode Island, "all excuses set aparte, to mende...all locks, stocks and pieces which by order from the warden of each towne shall be presented to them". Seven years later he was a member of that court and was involved in laying out lots and highways and settling land disputes. In 1661 he would embark on a new venture, which would require him and his family to put this experience to good use.

The Misquamicut Company was formed in Newport to purchase and settle land in the vicinity of what is now Westerly, in the southwestern corner of Rhode Island, just across the river from Stonington. On the 31st of August in 1661 the purchasers met at Caleb Carr's home in Newport to get organized; and JAMES BADCOCK, as it was spelled then, received Lot 52. The following year JAMES and his son JOHN were among 18 men selected by the company to survey the tract and hold possession.

The town of Westerly, including the present towns of Charlestown, Hopkinton and Richmond, was incorporated on May

18, 1669. The list of 24 freeman inhabitants at that time included Edward Larkin, Tobias Saunders, Daniel Stanton and four Badcocks - JAMES and his three sons: James, Job and JOHN.

As mentioned earlier, this area between Narragansett Bay and the Pawcatuck River was claimed by both Rhode Island and Connecticut. In 1664 JAMES had found it necessary to petition the General Court at Newport for protection "against such riotous actings as are done and committed by the men of Southerton" (Stonington). The Court did protest to Connecticut authorities, apparently without any subsequent easing of tension. In June of 1670 three Connecticut men, John Frink, Benjamin Palmer and Thomas Bell, came over into Westerly with summonses for some of the Westerly men to appear in court in Connecticut. Armed with a warrant from Tobias Saunders, JAMES BADCOCK arrested the three; and Frink was put in a Rhode Island jail. The following day Connecticut officers arrested JAMES and set his bail at 100 pounds. Saunders and Stanton bailed him out; and when he did appear in court Connecticut wasn't ready to try him, so he was released, this time on 20 pounds bail, and ordered to appear later at a court in New London. The final resolution of the case is not known.

In May of 1671 the Rhode Island Colony, evidently fearing that Connecticut was trying to gain the allegiance of the Misquamicut settlers, ordered, "that the several inhabitants be called on to see how they stand as to their fidelity to his Majesties and the Colony". Both JAMES and his son JOHN appeared and promised to "stand faithful".

JAMES died in 1675, just about the time of the start of King Philip's War. Westerly became untenable, most of the inhabitants returning to the safety of Newport until the fall of 1676. JAMES' son JOHN, however, is reported to have joined a Stonington militia company, the inter-colony rivalry apparently having been superseded by the need to join forces against the Indians.

JOHN BADCOCK was married to MARY LAWTON, daughter of GEORGE LAWTON and granddaughter of THOMAS HAZARD, two of the early Portsmouth settlers. JOHN died in 1685, the same year that the Westerly Town Council began to spell the name in its present form - BABCOCK.

* * *

It would be 1728 before Connecticut relinquished its claims to the land between the Pawcatuck River and Narragansett Bay. And those claims had caused problems, not just at the border between Stonington and Westerly, but farther east as well. In 1643 SAMUEL GORTON and John Greene founded the town of Warwick, a few miles south of Providence on the west

side of Narragansett Bay. Then, during the next 30 years, people from Warwick, from the east side of the bay, from Aquidneck and from Connecticut began to settle the area farther south - what is now Washington County, or South County as it is often called locally, the present towns of North and South Kingstown and Narragansett. Among these early settlers was SAMUEL ELDRED from Stonington, Connecticut.

The year 1670 would be a noteworthy one for SAMUEL ELDRED. Born in England, he had been in Cambridge, Massachusetts in 1646, then moved to Stonington and, by 1668, to Wickford, now part of North Kingstown. Having come from Connecticut, ELDRED evidently considered himself a citizen of that colony, and he wasn't alone. Apparently Connecticut wasn't doing much for these settlers; and in May 1668 SAMUEL and 18 others petitioned the Governor of Connecticut for protection or release to "government and protection elsewhere". Whatever protection they may have received as a result of this, they evidently did not give up on their home state. On 22 June 1670 SAMUEL took the oath of office as Constable of Wickford, an action which, three weeks later, he must have looked back on as being one of his bigger mistakes.

In July 1670 one Thomas Flounders allegedly killed a Walter Howes, or House, and it fell to Constable ELDRED to call a jury on behalf of the Connecticut Colony. He apparently was in the process of doing this, including appointing his son SAMUEL, when a delegation from Rhode Island arrived on the scene. On 13 July 1670 SAMUEL wrote to Thomas Stanton at Stonington as follows:

"Mr. Stanton, Sir:

This is to inform you how the case stands with the town of Wickford, in respect of Rhode Island. This very day there came down Mr. Samuel Wilson and Mr. Jirch Bull and Thomas Mumford, with his blackstaff, and upon this sad accident; and would have panelled the jury, whereupon I told them that they had nothing to do here, to panel a jury; but if they would look upon the corpse they might, which several of them did, Then they commanded, in his Majesty's name, some to serve, and commanded myself to serve as a jurymen upon the inquest, and commanded John Cole and several others, which did refuse. I also warned them to serve in a jury for us, as we were under Connecticut, but they would not, but commanded us not to bury the man till a jury had passed on it, by nature of their power. So there was mighty commanding in his Majesty's name on both sides, and mighty threatening of carry to jail, insomuch that neither party could get twelve on a side. But at last they commanded all that were on their side to come out and they would panel a jury, if there were but six. Upon that account, the doors were shut where the corpse was, so they called the people to bear witness that they were obstructed in their power and

commanded us in his Majesty's name, not to bury the man, and told us that they would return their actings and words to our magistrates. So they commanded all the party to go with them. And so we proceeded and buried the man, and have searched for the murderer but cannot find him, and therefore would entreat you be strong and send away word to Connecticut by the first, for we are in greater trouble than ever we were, and like to be in worse, therefore, mind your promises and stand by us. John Cole stood to it and assisted as much as could be, not having taken the oath. Captain Hudson has not been here since, and sir the people will fain be doing, and beg to find that if it be not mended suddenly, it will be bad times here. Not more at present, but remain, yours to serve,

Samwill Eldridge".

Since it was summer, the citizens of Wickford must have been relieved that ELDRED and his cohorts at least buried the body. However, SAMUEL WILSON and Jirch Bull, having informed the governor of the murder of Walter House, who they said was "illegally and disorderly buried", were ordered to "repair forthwith to the place where the body was buried and cause it to be taken up and a jury inquest to pass thereon".

They also had SAMUEL ELDRED put in prison. Connecticut protested, and we assume he was soon released. 95 years later descendants of ELDRED and WILSON would marry, this 1670 incident being the only case we know of where one of our ancestors had another one thrown in jail.

In 1675, during King Philip's War, ELDRED was in a group which captured 18 Indians just six days before the Great Swamp Fight in Kingston. Then he and JOHN SWEET were involved in providing relief to families which had been burned out or displaced, being authorized by the Council at Hartford to "transport 10 bushels of Indian corn apiece for the distressed families". This would indicate that Connecticut was at least doing something for its people over near Narragansett Bay. In 1679 ELDRED was one of 42 signers, probably a very enthusiastic one, of a petition to the king to resolve the differences between Connecticut and Rhode Island.

Let's take a quick look at some of the other early settlers of Washington County. There was HENRY KNOWLES, whose will directed, among other things, that his son mow the grass and that his daughter MARTHA was to receive the worse of two beds in the house. She probably brought that bed along when she married ELDRED's son, SAMUEL, JR. Their daughter PENELOPE would marry EPHRAIM GARDINER, son of HENRY of Pettaquamscutt. Another Pettaquamscutt settler was JOHN TEEFT, who left 20 acres there to his son-in-law SAMUEL WILSON, ELDRED's antagonist in the Wickford murder case. WILSON's daughter married JOHN POTTER, who had property at Pt.

Judith; and their daughter would later marry into the Babcock family.

JOHN SWEET, Senior had come over from England and lived first at Salem, where he was fined and imprisoned for shooting Governor Endicott's dog. After, and very likely because of, this, he moved to Providence, where he died in 1637. His widow then married Ezekiel Holiman, the man who had baptized Roger Williams after CATHERINE SCOTT had converted Williams to the Baptist beliefs.

SWEET's son, JOHN, JR, was the one who had been assigned to help ELDRED distribute corn to the settlers during King Philip's War. He was the operator of a grist mill near East Greenwich, a mill which had been burned by the Indians during the war. It was rebuilt by his sons DANIEL and James.

JOHN BRIGGS first shows up in records in Narragansett in 1667. There is no indication that he was in any way related to Clement Briggs of the early days of the Plymouth Colony. Nor can we trace him to Freetown, Massachusetts, where there were large numbers of people named Briggs and Hathaway, the latter also being of an unrelated line.

JOHN apparently was a Quaker, and there are indications that meetings were held at his house. He had purchased land in Narragansett in 1667, and in 1672 he joined five other men to buy part of "Fone's Purchase" from Chief Awashnett. He held a variety of local offices, being a constable and clerk of a military company. All of the eight children of JOHN and FRANCES BRIGGS were born in North Kingstown, a town whose records were largely destroyed by fire. Their grandson EBENEZER would marry ELEANOR SWEET, great granddaughter of JOHN who had helped ELDRED distribute the corn.

JOSEPH SHEFFIELD did not actually move into Washington County until about the turn of the century; but he was involved in the affairs of this part of the state much earlier than that. Born in Portsmouth in 1661, the oldest son of ICHABOD SHEFFIELD, JOSEPH became a major landowner, a farmer and a lawyer. By the age of 35 he was actively involved in the political life of the southern Rhode Island towns, being Deputy from Portsmouth to the General Assembly in 1696, moderator of town meetings the following year and a Colonial Assistant for the next eight years.

In May of 1699 he was on a committee to settle the boundaries of the towns of Kingston, Westerly and Greenwich; and in October of that year he was appointed to a seven man committee to inspect and transcribe colonial laws. In 1703 JOSEPH was on a commission to resolve the boundary disputes with Connecticut; and from 1704 to 1706, while serving as Attorney General of Rhode Island, he actively opposed the Connecticut encroachments, thereby incurring the wrath of Connecticut and Massachusetts authorities.

SHEFFIELD had been named as a Colonial Agent to England; but he never got to go to England, apparently because of having angered the Earl of Bellamont, former governor of Massachusetts. In what must have been one of the earlier instances of political mud-slinging, the Earl wrote to London, "their new agent for England, Joseph Sheffield, keeps a little blind rum house, where the Indians are his best customers, as none of the English will go near him". (We may recall that another former Attorney General, EDWARD RICHMOND, had been fined for selling rum to the Indians.)

JOSEPH SHEFFIELD eventually moved to Washington County and bought land at Narragansett. His son EDMUND lived there for a while; but EDMUND moved around a lot and was in and out of several southern Rhode Island towns. In 1723 he was chosen packer, gager and sealer of weights and measures for South Kingstown; and in 1733 he purchased land in North Kingstown. In 1742 Exeter was set off as a separate town, and he was a member of the first town council there. Then in 1750 he bought 700 acres at Corn Neck on Block Island for 8,500 pounds. He later served as a Deputy to the General Assembly from New Shoreham, the official name of the town on Block Island.

EDMUND SHEFFIELD continued to reside on Block Island; and in 1757, during the French and Indian War, he supplied provisions to a privateer sent out from Newport against the French. EDMUND died in 1764 while on a trip to Newport. 47 years later on Block Island, his great granddaughter would marry into the Babcock family.

* * *

In June of 1707, at the age of 24, GEORGE BABCOCK was baptized by Elder William Hiscox and joined the Seventh Day Baptist Church of Newport and Westerly. While most of us have heard of the Baptist Church and the Seventh Day Adventist Church, the Seventh Day Baptists are a very small group; there were 6,000 members in the United States in 1960. Rev. Frederick Denison, in his 1877 book Westerly And Its Witnesses, refers to it as the Sabbatarian Church and says it started when seven members of the First Baptist Church of Newport broke away from that church in 1671. That would have been while OBADIAH HOLMES was its pastor.

GEORGE BABCOCK evidently remained an enthusiastic member, as he left the church 300 pounds in his will. But GEORGE could probably afford it. The son and grandson of two of the original Westerly settlers, he was a major landowner in the area. In 1709 he and 26 others bought a large tract in Westerly and Kingston known as the Shannock Purchase. His portion was in Westerly, extending from the south side of Shannock Hill to the Pawcatuck River. This must have been a

sizable tract; we know that his son ELISHA settled on a 350 acre section of it in what would soon become the town of Richmond, and another son HEZEKIAH settled on 800 acres in present day Hopkinton.

Our ancestry includes eight generations of Babcocks, from GEORGE's grandfather JAMES down to SUSAN, who would marry into the Briggs family in 1865; but from GEORGE on there are three different paths, as the Babcocks seemed to make a habit of marrying other Babcocks. Otherwise, spouses of Babcocks included members of the Cross, Hall, Lawton, Peckham, Perry, Potter, Sheffield and Wheeler families.

* * *

Back in Wickford, EPHRAIM GARDINER has been described as "a man of uncommon mark and influence in the community". He was, we may recall, the son of HENRY and ABIGAIL and the grandson of GEORGE and HERODIAS. The extensive family land holdings, however, had come from John Porter, the second or third (depending on how you count them) husband of HERODIAS.

EPHRAIM GARDINER, like his grandfather EDWARD RICHMOND, was a member of the Anglican Church. The parish registry of St. Paul's Church in Wickford for April 1774 notes as follows: "Col. Ephraim Gardiner, a member in full Communion with St. Paul's Church, was seized in his field with an Apoplexy; and on Sunday the 10th Died, and on Wednesday the 13th he was buried.....a Funeral Sermon was preached...to a very large Serious and Attentive Congregation consisting, As was judged, of above 300 people. After Divine Service was over the Funeral Obsequies was Carried in Procession to the Farm of Capt. Samuel Gardiner and Buried there after the Manner & According to the method of the Church of England".

Also in 1774 Rhode Island prohibited the importation of slaves. HENRY had been a slave owner and had willed a "negro wench" to his widow ABIGAIL; but we don't know whether EPHRAIM had slaves or left any to his widow. She was PENELOPE (ELDRED), granddaughter of the much beleaguered Wickford constable; and her inheritance from her father was somewhat unusual for the period, including 37 pounds in Bills of Public Credit of New England with interest thereon at 8%.

Two of the sons of EPHRAIM and PENELOPE GARDINER of Wickford went across to Middletown on Aquidneck Island and married daughters of JONATHAN EASTON. Samuel Gardiner married Amy Easton; and Captain CHRISTOPHER GARDINER married Amy's sister MARY in 1753, and they returned to the west side of the bay. Their daughter PATIENCE married a man named JOHN LARKIN and became the mother of JOHN G. LARKIN, the "G" probably standing for Gardiner. The Larkins had been in southern Rhode Island for some time, but we have not been

able to document the exact descent of these JOHN LARKINS. We do, however, have some background on the family of JOHN G.'s wife, HANNAH SHERMAN. She was not, as far as we know, related to the Shermans in the Beebe line. These Shermans, like the Babcocks, seemed to make a habit of marrying other Shermans. They were mostly in Portsmouth and the Kingstowns but had input from outside.

* * *

EDWARD WILCOX had been in Portsmouth in its earliest days in 1638, but his son DANIEL moved back to the east into what is now Westport, Massachusetts but had originally been part of the Dartmouth settlement. There he acquired a large estate with land on both sides of the Westport River. In 1661 he married, probably as his second wife, ELIZABETH COOKE, the daughter of Mayflower passenger and Dartmouth founder JOHN COOKE. Thus COOKE is an ancestor in both the Hathaway and the Briggs lines.

WILCOX then bought land in Tiverton and Little Compton, and in 1668 he and JOHN COOKE were operating a ferry from this land over to Portsmouth on Aquidneck Island. DANIEL WILCOX had rather unusual linguistic capabilities. He signed his name by making his mark, indicating that he could not write, yet there are indications that he understood the language of the Wampanoags. He evidently was on friendly terms with the Indians, and an Indian sachem gave land, "to well beloved friend Daniel".

The towns of Tiverton and Little Compton are part of Rhode Island today, being part of those narrow strips of mainland between Narragansett Bay and the Massachusetts border. They had been part of the original Plymouth Colony, and in DANIEL WILCOX's time were disputed territory. In Tiverton DANIEL voiced his opposition to paying the Congregational minister, something which apparently was no problem to Rhode Islanders but angered the Massachusetts authorities. DANIEL put a cannon in front of his house to defend against Massachusetts troops. There is no evidence that he ever fired it at them, but he was fined 150 pounds; so he left and went back to what he knew was Rhode Island.

The youngest of the eight children of DANIEL and ELIZABETH was a daughter LYDIA, born about 1675, as King Philip's War was starting. She went with her parents to Rhode Island and in 1702 married THOMAS SHERMAN. THOMAS was the grandson of PHILIP, who had come from England, settled at Portsmouth and whose children mostly moved over to the Kingstowns. As we noted above, Shermans married other Shermans; and they also married people named Lawton, Earle and Wilbour.

A grandson of THOMAS and LYDIA was DAVID SHERMAN, who served in the colonial forces in the Revolutionary War. He

is, according to a family note, a qualifying ancestor for the Sons of the American Revolution.

Another ancestor from Rhode Island who served in the Revolution was SWEET BRIGGS, referred to in family records as "Sweet Briggs of Revolutionary Fame". What this fame is based on is not clear, but there is ample documentation of his service in the Colonial forces. Born in North Kingstown, he moved to Warwick with his family while still a child; and it is from there that he enlisted. He served under Colonel Waterman and later under Colonel Dyer.

SWEET was the son of EBENEZER BRIGGS and ELEANOR SWEET, which explains his unusual first name. While one might expect that being named Sweet might cause a man some problems in the army, it evidently didn't bother him too much, as he named one of his sons SWEET BRIGGS, II.

SWEET was married to MARTHA TANNER from another early Kingstown family, some of whom moved out to Stephentown, New York. After the war, SWEET and MARTHA moved back to South Kingstown, which would be the birthplace of the next three Briggs generations.

On Christmas 1839 in South Kingstown, grandchildren of these two Revolutionary soldiers were married. The bride was MARTHA SHERMAN LARKIN, granddaughter of DAVID and HANNAH (SHERMAN) SHERMAN and of JOHN and PATIENCE (GARDINER) LARKIN. The groom was CHARLES BRIGGS, SWEET's grandson.

* * *

We'll return to the Larkin and Briggs families shortly; but first a look at the activities of one Babcock during the war. This story involves GEORGE BABCOCK, the third of that name, and a man named Slocum, whom we assume was a Loyalist. In 1777 Newport was in the hands of the British forces, and a local newspaper, the Gaines Weekly Mercury, was controlled by the British. The following article appeared in the April 4, 1777 edition of that paper:

"Last Thursday a party of rebels, under the command of one George Babcock, came into the house of Mr. Charles Slocum at North Kingston, R.I. His son, coming to the door, was immediately collared by one of the banditts. Young Slocum clenched with him, and would soon have made him repent his rashness, had it not been for the interference of the rest of the gang. His father, seeing the scuffle, came out of the house to interfere in behalf of his son, when the infamous Babcock discharged a pistol at him. The ball entered a little below the heart and he died in about three hours. Not content with the misery they had already occasioned to this unhappy family, they took both his sons, and dragged them before their Assembly, who in their clemency

permitted them to return under a strong guard to attend the funeral of their murdered father. The mourning relatives were accordingly escorted to the grave by this unfeeling clan who immediately on their return have carried both the young men to the Providence jail. This unparalleled barbarity is said to be occasioned by the information of some villain that has escaped from Newport. Every breast susceptible of the miseries of its fellow-creatures must feel for this unhappy family - a husband murdered, a number of orphans deprived of him to whom they were wont to look up for support; and, to complete the tragic scene, two sons, whose presence at home might in some measure have alleviated the loss of their parent, are likewise torn from their wives, expecting soon to share the same cruel fate. And all of this performed by men who have decorated their standard with the specious name of Liberty and justice".

Then we have PELEG W. BABCOCK, whose military status and relationship to GEORGE were both a little confusing. He was a Quaker, yet he was a Captain in the South Kingstown Militia; and, due to marriages of Babcocks to Babcocks, he was GEORGE's cousin and also his son-in-law.

* * *

We shall now shift from that "unparalleled barbarity" to something a little more genteel - silver spoons. MARTHA SHERMAN LARKIN, the yuletide bride of CHARLES BRIGGS, had three silver spoons which have been passed down through several generations and which point out the existence of several silversmiths in 18th and 19th century Rhode Island.

A 5 3/4" coin silver teaspoon, inscribed "M.S.L." (for MARTHA SHERMAN LARKIN), made by Henry L. Webster, who operated in Providence from 1831.

An 8 3/4" silver dessert spoon, inscribed "J.H.L." (possibly for JOHN and HANNAH LARKIN, MARTHA's parents), made by Joseph Perkins. Perkins was also a goldsmith and a gunsmith. He lived from 1749 to 1789, and he lived and worked in a place called Little Rest, R.I.

A 7 3/4" dessert spoon, inscribed "P.G." (for PATIENCE GARDINER, MARTHA's grandmother), made by John Waite of Wickford and South Kingstown (1742-1817).

In 1966 DORIS SNOW (BRIGGS) HATHAWAY donated these spoons to the Rhode Island Historical Society. They are at the Society's museum, 110 Benevolent Street, Providence; but they are not always on exhibition.

CHARLES and MARTHA BRIGGS had nine children. One of the five boys among these was CHARLES HENRY BRIGGS, born in 1844 in South Kingstown. At the age of 18 he started working for the railroad; and for most of his life he was a conductor on what was known as The Old Stonington Line. On February 27, 1865 he married SUSAN HARRIETT BABCOCK, daughter of EDMUND and MARTHA (BABCOCK) BABCOCK. On November 28 of that year their first child, CHARLES EDMUND BRIGGS, was born. He would become a lumber broker and would marry LUELLA ERMINIE SNOW.

-

Chapter 17

FROM TWO PLYMOUTH SERVANTS

Edward Doty had come to Plymouth on the Mayflower in 1620 as a servant to STEPHEN HOPKINS. By 1627 he had completed his term of service; and by 1638 he had servants of his own. In that year Richard Derby transferred to Doty the seven year indenture of WILLIAM SNOW. Doty was in and out of trouble in the Plymouth Colony, and some of it must have rubbed off on SNOW. Twice in 1651 he was hauled into court for "vain, light and lascivious carriage".

Three years later he settled down and married REBECCA BROWNE, daughter of Mayflower passenger PETER BROWNE. They moved to Bridgewater, where they apparently had received some land from her father. His son JOSEPH married a lady named HOPESTILL, who is thought (but not known) to be the granddaughter of John Alden. Their son JOSEPH, JR., moved to Providence, where he became an active and controversial member of the Congregational Church.

JOHN IRISH was a laborer from County Somerset in England when he signed an indenture to work at Plymouth for Timothy Hatherly, a feltmaker and one of The Adventurers, the group which had financed the Plymouth venture. JOHN was to receive five pounds per year; and when his five year term expired he was to receive 12 bushels of wheat and 25 acres of land. By 1641 he was in Duxbury; and, although he hadn't yet received his 25 acres, he did have five acres that he had received from some other source. Then he entered into a double-or-nothing agreement with one Henry Wallis whereby the survivor of the two would get the other's five acres. JOHN outlived Henry and later traded the ten acres, which was alongside a stream, to a couple of men who wanted to build a mill. In return he received a house and garden lot.

JOHN wasn't so lucky in trying to get the 25 acres from his indenture. Duxbury, for some strange reason, had agreed that land guaranteed by an indenture would actually be provided by the town. He never did get the land in Duxbury; however, the Court ruled that he could search out land, and it also assigned CONSTANT SOUTHWORTH to help him. What he eventually found and was granted was in Sakonnet at the mouth of Narragansett Bay, now part of the town of Little Compton, Rhode Island.

Also arriving at Plymouth in the 1630's, but staying for a very short time, was SAMUEL GORTON. A clothier from London, GORTON had been educated by private tutors as a child and had been brought up in the established church. However, he adopted a more anti-establishment position after arriving in Boston as the authorities there were proceeding against Rev. Wheelwright. SAMUEL left and went to Plymouth;

but he couldn't put up with the restrictive practices of Governor Prence there, so he moved again - this time to Aquidneck Island.

About three years later he purchased land near Providence, but there were problems with the title to this property, so off he went again. This time, in 1642, he bought land south of Providence on the west side of Narragansett Bay, and the next year he and John Greene founded what would become the city of Warwick. One biographer said of GORTON, "He did indeed clothe his thoughts at times in clouds, but that was because they were too large for any other garment".

GORTON's daughter MARY first married Peter Greene and later married JOHN SANFORD, son of the JOHN SANFORD whom we met in Chapter 3 as Governor Winthrop's agent. The elder JOHN, like so many others, had managed to get in trouble with his former boss for defending Anne Hutchinson, had been disarmed, as had UNDERHILL and EASTON, and had joined Hutchinson's Portsmouth Colony. The JOHN SANFORDs, senior and junior, both held many important positions in the early Colonial government in Rhode Island.

The next two generations of Sanford ancestors married women from the Howland and Philips families; and then, about 1740, LOIS SANFORD, who had been born in Bristol, Rhode Island, married EDWARD IRISH. EDWARD, a miller by trade, was the great grandson of JOHN IRISH the immigrant servant. EDWARD and LOIS moved down to Portsmouth, where their son ISAAC became a boat builder. ISAAC's daughter PATIENCE would eventually marry into the Snow family.

We noted above that JOSEPH SNOW,II had moved from Bridgewater, first to Easton, Massachusetts and then to Providence, where he joined the First Congregational Church. There was some unrest in that church; and apparently JOSEPH, who had been a Deacon in Easton, was among those causing this unrest.

Some members of the congregation accused their pastor, Rev. Josiah Cotton, of preaching "damnable good works" and claimed that his preaching was "destitute of sound evangelical principles". Some thirty or so of the members seceded from the church, this group including Deacon JOSEPH SNOW, SOLOMON SEARLE and Joseph Snow,Jr. The final separation took place on 7 March 1743. A year later Mr.Cotton's church suspended the seceders, stating that, "they set up a separate meeting, where they attended to the exhortations of a lay brother who had been brought up in the business of house carpentry.....and were entertained on the Lord's day with loud and vociferous declamations on the downfall of Babylon".

JOSEPH SNOW was elected to the office of Ruling Elder

of the new church, the Beneficent Congregational Church, in October 1743; and he held this office until his death 30 years later at age 82. His son, Joseph, Jr., later became the pastor of this church, which is located on Weybosset Street in downtown Providence. The present (1991) minister states that he is only the 10th pastor in the 248 year history of this church. The First Congregational Church, from which they had seceded, eventually became the Unitarian Church.

The youngest son of JOSEPH and ELIZABETH (FIELD) SNOW was JAMES. A carpenter by trade, from 1776 to 1780 he was Captain of the Fourth Company of Militia; and in 1778 he was in Colonel John Mathewson's Regiment of the colonial forces. JAMES' wife, HANNAH (SEARLE), was the daughter of SOLOMON SEARLE, one of the "seceders", and was also descended from JOHN GLADDING, one of the earliest residents of Bristol. EDWARD SNOW, youngest of the eight children of JAMES and HANNAH, married PATIENCE IRISH in 1805, thus bringing together the families of two of the Plymouth Colony's indentured servants.

EDWARD and PATIENCE apparently lived in various parts of Rhode Island, although one part of that small state is not very far from any other. We believe they were married in Portsmouth, and EDWARD was a Justice of the Peace there. The oldest of their eight children was born in Tiverton, and WILLIAM G., the fourth child, was born in Smithfield, north of Providence.

Sometime about 1840 WILLIAM G. married NANCY R. INMAN, a lady whose ancestry is still not definitely known to us. The Inman family was prominent in early Rhode Island, going back to Edward, an early settler of Warwick. Edward became one of Rhode Island's biggest land owners, with property encompassing most of the present towns of Smithfield and North Smithfield and part of Woonsocket. The Inman name is common in Burrilville, NANCY's birthplace, in the adjacent town of Glocester and in nearby Worcester County, Massachusetts; yet searches of the records in those places have so far failed to identify her. There is good circumstantial evidence indicating that she was the daughter of Alfred and Sylvia (Swift) Inman of Uxbridge, Massachusetts. If this is correct, then her ancestry would include members of the Coney, Gould, Greenland, Morse, Rhodes and Swift families, from towns south and southwest of Boston.

WILLIAM and NANCY lived in Warwick for a while, and that is where their children were born. By 1870, however, they were in Providence, and WILLIAM was working at the Delaine Mill, as was his son Herbert. In 1880 they lived at 6 Sampson Avenue in Providence, and in 1908 at 141 Superior St. He died on 31 July 1908, and she died six days later; but we don't know of any common cause of death.

The eight children of WILLIAM G. and NANCY R.(INMAN) SNOW were born over a span of 20 years. The oldest, Alvina, was born in 1842; and in October 1862 their youngest child, LUELLA ERMINIE SNOW, was born in the Crompton section of Warwick. In 1890 she would marry CHARLES EDMUND BRIGGS, and they would be the parents of DORIS SNOW (BRIGGS) HATHAWAY.

-

PART VI

The Twentieth Century

Beebe, Briggs, Brush, Bushby, Harkrader, Hathaway, McGrew and Snow: in a few pages we have covered some 300 years and consolidated hundreds of families into these eight. Then, just before the turn of the century, the eight became four.

We are now talking about people whom we know or have known. However, no attempt will be made to write biographies of the living.

Chapter 18

TO WESTFIELD

TULLIS TALMAGE HARKRADER: we've seen the first name spelled Tullis and Tulus; the middle name has been spelled Talmage and Talmadge; and there are some Cincinnati records calling him Talmage T. instead of Tullis T. The Tullis name probably came from his grandmother, MARGARET (TULLIS) HARKRADER; the Talmage reportedly was from a prominent minister of the period, possibly Thomas De Witt Talmage, a popular lecturer whose sermons were widely published. To keep this simple and avoid further controversy, we'll refer to him as T.T., which seems to be what most people called him anyway.

T.T. HARKRADER was living in Cincinnati with his mother, sister Ariel and younger brother Ellison H. in 1889 when he first went to work to help support the family. Only 14 years old at the time, his first job was in a shop; but he suffered a severe injury to his left leg and had to leave that job. He then became a stenographer and went to work for the Pennsylvania Railroad.

In 1896 he married ALICE MCGREW of Cincinnati, the exact date and place of the marriage being uncertain. While family notes say they were married in Cincinnati on July 25, records of Campbell County, Kentucky, across the river, show that they were married in Newport, Kentucky on November 17 by John J. Bauchard, Justice of the Peace.

By May of the following year T.T. and ALICE were in New York City, and in that month their first child, WILBUR TALMAGE HARKRADER, was born. The next year, 1898, T.T. went to work for the American Tobacco Company. This job, in their traffic department, probably was related to his previous experience with the railroad. In 1900 a daughter Mildred was born, and in 1902 another son Paul.

Shortly thereafter, about 1903, the family moved to Westfield, New Jersey, where they lived on Dudley Avenue and where another son, Milton Keene Harkrader, was born in September of 1906. Before M.K. was a year old his brother Paul contracted polio and died within two days. M.K., or Bus, as he is usually called, also contracted polio and suffered permanent damage to one leg. Mildred and WILBUR evidently escaped the disease.

T.T. was promoted to the position of Traffic Manager with American Tobacco, and in 1919 he was elected to the Board of Directors. He commuted from Westfield to New York on the Jersey Central Railroad; and the following article appeared in a 1923 issue of the Westfield Leader:

"T.T. Harkrader of Dudley Avenue, who recently

moved to St. Louis, has done what probably none of the Westfield commuters has thought to do - saved all his monthly tickets from the time when, 20 years ago, he settled in this town. From the first month, each expired ticket was put away in a place of safekeeping, and now there are 240 in the assortment of colored punched cards.

"Many of these tickets have not more than half the rides cancelled, as Mr. Harkrader's business took him away on long journeys. In such periods, the Central Railroad got the better of the bargain. He says facetiously that the day may come when he will have accumulated enough cancelled tickets to paper a room with, and that is what he is saving them for."

T.T. did return to Westfield and presumably to the Jersey Central, but there is no indication that he ever collected enough tickets to use as wallpaper. However, judging from some of the stories recounted by his grandchildren, he might well have tried it. Among his alleged exploits were taking a hammer to a solidly frozen ice cream cake on the dining room table, and painting the entire inside of the garage, including windows and tools, with grey paint. The grandchildren also remember being loaded into his seven passenger Cadillac and taken for a day's outing at Asbury Park.

WILBUR, the oldest child of T.T. and ALICE, went to the University of Pennsylvania, where he received a degree in dentistry. He served in the Navy for a short time during World War I and then returned to Westfield and set up a dental practice. We shall pick up the story of WILBUR, his marriage and his family shortly.

Mildred, the middle child and only daughter, married Frank Snyder; and they had two children, a son Frank Lee and a daughter Jeanne. The Snyders lived near Clinton, about 30 miles west of Westfield. Mildred and Frank were later divorced; and Mildred, Lee and Jeanne moved to Westfield for a while. Mildred married Harold Welch, and they lived in St. Thomas, Virgin Islands. After his death she married William Cox, an attorney; and they had a large home in St. Thomas.

M.K., the youngest, accompanied his parents to St. Louis, where he attended Washington University and, like his brother, earned a degree in dentistry. He then returned to Westfield, where he joined WILBUR in practicing dentistry. M.K. married Elizabeth Evans; and they had a daughter Elizabeth Ann and a son M.K., Jr.

T.T.'s mother, SUSAN EMMA, spent some of her later years with her daughter Ariel in Colorado before coming to New Jersey, where she died about 1943 at the age of about

90. According to one family story, one of the last acts of GRAN HARKRADER, as she was called, was to call her son to complain about the institutional food she was receiving and tell him to bring her a good ham sandwich.

* * *

NELLIE BRUSH, we may recall, had lost her first husband in early 1887; and in 1892 in Bethel, Connecticut she married GEORGE H. BEEBE, the little Georgie of Chapter 8. We don't know exactly where GEORGE was employed, but it must have been in the New York City area. Their first child, Grace Benedict Beebe, was born in East Orange, New Jersey in 1893; and their second, KATHRYN BEEBE, was born in Brooklyn six years later.

All was not happy between GEORGE and NELLIE. They eventually separated; and NELLIE and KATHRYN went to live in Westfield with Grace and her husband, Lynn D. Stiles. Grace and Lynn had one son, William Hathaway Stiles, born in 1913.

KATHRYN BEEBE was employed as a secretary for a lawyer in Westfield when she attended a social affair at the Westfield Methodist Church and met Dr. WILBUR T. HARKRADER. They were married on October 12, 1921.

KATHRYN's mother, NELLIE, had had only daughters; and KATHRYN followed suit, having three girls. The first of these, Kathryn Alice Harkrader, was born in 1923; the second, GRACE ELEANOR, in 1926; and the youngest, Nancy, in 1931. The family remained in Westfield, living on Dudley Avenue and Dorian Road before moving, about 1930, to Kimball Avenue East.

WILBUR practiced dentistry in Westfield for over 50 years, most of this time in partnership with his brother, in an office at the corner of Elm and Quimby Streets. The two, WILBUR and Bus, were regular patrons of the lunch counter at the nearby Jarvis Pharmacy, which closed in 1990 after 66 years in business.

NELLIE died in 1920 and was buried next to her first husband, George S. Baird and their daughter Julia in the Baird family plot in Bethel. KATHRYN's father, GEORGE H. BEEBE, died about 20 years later on Christmas Eve in 1940. Having been estranged from the family for some years, he was virtually unknown by his grandchildren.

Their other grandfather, T.T., who certainly was known by his grandchildren, died in 1944 after a long battle with thyroid cancer. He was so respected by the president of the American Tobacco Company, George Washington Hill, that all the company's offices were closed the day of T.T.'s funeral.

Mr. Hill came to the Westfield funeral in his chauffeur driven limousine; and two special cars on the Jersey Central Railroad brought other American Tobacco people and members of the New York Traffic Club, of which T.T. had been president. To quote his son, Bus, "I don't think Westfield ever had a funeral of that size before or after".

T.T.'s widow, ALICE (MCGREW) HARKRADER remained in Westfield, where she was a member of the Methodist Church. She was also known for bringing excellent angel cakes to family Sunday dinners. It would have taken a visitor some time to find out that her name was ALICE, she being known to the whole family as NANNIE.

Another Alice whose real name is not obvious is the oldest daughter of WILBUR and KATHRYN. We have noted that her first name was really Kathryn; however, she went by her middle name until her youngest sister tried to say Alice and it came out Ozzie, which is what she is generally called today. Alice, or Oz, married J. Norman Johnson, who wasn't going by his first name either. Alice graduated from Smith College, Norm returned from WWII duty in Europe with the 82nd Airborne Division and earned a degree in dentistry at Western Reserve, and they settled in Jamestown, New York.

Skipping for a moment to the youngest daughter, Nancy graduated from Bucknell and became an elementary school teacher: first in South Salem, New York, in the home territory of many of her Brush line ancestors; later in Cranford, New Jersey, next door to Westfield; and finally in Tom's River, New Jersey, where she is still (1991) teaching.

WILBUR and KATHRYN and their daughters spent many summer vacations on the shores of Lake Kezar, near Center Lovell, Maine. The family would rent a cottage at Boulder Brook Resort for three weeks; and there were some summers when the girls spent two months at nearby Camp Mudjekeewis.

The middle daughter, GRACE ELEANOR HARKRADER, graduated from the University of Wisconsin in 1948. She taught second grade at the Roosevelt School in Cranford, was an enthusiastic member of the Plainfield Ski Club, took some summer courses at the University of Maine, and in 1952 made a trip to Bermuda. Shortly after returning from that trip she was hostess at a bridal shower for Marie Tifft (now Mrs. Hale Champion) when one of the guests, a high school classmate, walked in and said, "We have somebody staying with us whom I think you'd like to meet".

Chapter 19

TO BARRINGTON AND BEYOND

Page 780 of the 1888-1889 Salem Directory contained three advertisements, all somewhat similar to those old ads one occasionally sees on wallpaper or gift wrapping paper. The top one is for Chas. P. Spencer & Co., dealers in harnesses, whips, blankets, robes, trunks, bags & pocket books; located at 243 Essex Street, "3 doors above Horse Car Office". The center ad is for Henry P. Ives, "Old Corner Bookstore" at 232 Essex Street and with "Prices Always Very Low".

The bottom ad on the page reads as follows:

"DR. HYNDMAN'S
CELEBRATED BLACK MIXTURE,
OR, BLACK BOTTLE,

A Certain Cure for all affections of the Throat,
Lungs and Bronchial Tubes. This preparation is
from the original formula of the late Dr. Hyndman
and manufactured as ordered by him.

Prepared only in Salem by
Charles W. Hathaway & Co.
DRUGGISTS

137 ESSEX ST., cor. Liberty Street, SALEM, MASS."

We don't know who the late Dr. Hyndman was, the only other use of that name that we have found being as the middle name of one of ELLISON HARKRADER's sons. Whether the "Celebrated Black Mixture" ever cured anybody is questionable; but it evidently didn't kill anyone either, as C. W. HATHAWAY was still in business in 1895. By then, however, he had moved to 210 Essex Street, a little closer to the book store and harness shop. And he was then listed as a dealer in "trusses, supporters, elastic stockings, shoulder braces crutches, etc;", as well as the "most complete line of Optical Goods to be found in the city of Salem".

In the June 19, 1987 issue of the Salem Evening News there is an ad for C. W. HATHAWAY in a similar business, located at 214 Essex Street above a drug store. This ad, for a women's and children's department states that, "We have private rooms where ladies can enter and depart without being observed. It is presided over by a middle-aged lady of great experience, whose sympathy and attention deprive the timid and nervous of that feeling of awe and fright so often experienced on a visit of this kind among strangers. We make and fit all kinds of Bands, Supporters and Elastic Hose and Trusses for men, women and children".

By 1900 C.W. had evidently sold or otherwise left that business and was listed as a clerk at the C.H. Price Drug Company. At the time of his death in 1914 he was listed as a wholesale druggist.

On the 5th of January, 1887 this CHARLES W. HATHAWAY, a descendant of one of the Salem "witches", had married SARAH ABBOT BUSHBY, who was descended from one of the families instrumental in bringing those "witches" to trial. CHARLES and SARAH lived at 9 Ocean Street in Salem, just a few houses up from Salem Harbor. Their only child, HENRY BUSHBY HATHAWAY, was born there in 1891.

Living this close to the water and not far from Marblehead, HENRY became a boating enthusiast. He was, however, rejected for service in the Navy during World War I for physical reasons. He attended Lowell Textile Institute, completing a two year course in textile chemistry. He then went to work for J. & P. Coats, a Pawtucket, Rhode Island textile mill and the maker of Coats and Clark thread. While there he met Joseph P. Allen, whose wife Rowena introduced him to one of her college classmates, DORIS SNOW BRIGGS.

* * *

In 1890 CHARLES EDMUND BRIGGS and LUELLA ERMINIE SNOW, both descended from several early Rhode Island families, were married in Providence. Their first child, DORIS SNOW BRIGGS, was born in November of 1891; and another daughter, Helen Harriet Briggs, was born in 1893. At that time CHARLES E. was employed by the A.B. Rice Lumber Company in Providence. Sometime between 1896 and 1898 the family moved to Boston, living in the Back Bay section. We don't know what business he was in in Boston, but by 1900 CHARLES was back in Providence, where he pursued a career as a lumber broker for many years.

CHARLES had an office in the Barrigan Building in 1905 and in the Grosvenor Building in 1912. When they first returned to Providence, the family apparently lived with LUELLA's parents; their 1905 address was 141 Superior Street, which was the address given for WILLIAM G. and NANCY SNOW at the time of their deaths in 1908. By 1913, however, they were at 213 Doyle Avenue, just east of Hope Street, their home for the next 23 years.

DORIS graduated from Providence Classical High School and entered Brown University. She missed one year of school because of illness, so she and her younger sister Helen both graduated from Brown in 1914. DORIS was elected to Phi Beta Kappa and went on to earn a Master's degree from Brown, not a common occurrence for a woman at that time. She then taught at Providence Technical High School (later renamed Central High).

Helen Briggs was engaged to a man who lost his life in Europe in World War I. She never married, spending most of her life as a secretary to the Rev. Clarence Gallup, a Baptist minister, first in Providence and later in New York City when he became the head of the American Baptist Convention.

DORIS, as we have already noted, met HENRY BUSHBY HATHAWAY; and they were married on August 7, 1919 at Providence. They lived in half of a two family house on Belmont Street in Pawtucket, not far from the Providence line; and on October 27, 1924 their first and only child, a son, was born in Providence.

* * *

I am that son, CHARLES BRIGGS HATHAWAY; and, since I am neither proficient nor comfortable referring to myself in the third person, the remainder of this chapter and much of the next chapter will be written in an autobiographical manner.

* * *

In a few years my parents decided to move out of the city; and they purchased a lot and contracted for a house in West Barrington, about 8 miles south of Providence. They took possession of the house in November of 1929, a month after the stock market crash and the start of the depression. My father lost his job in the laboratory at Coats; but the company kept him on in an office job, and my mother did substitute teaching, and they managed to hold on to the house.

My paternal grandfather, CHARLES W. HATHAWAY the druggist, had died ten years before I was born; and his wife SARAH had moved around the corner to an apartment on Cliff Street, where she died in 1934. I was naturally much better acquainted with my maternal grandparents. As a newborn, I had had my first automobile ride, home from the hospital, in their brand new 1924 Dodge.; and I had many other rides in that car. Grandfather CHARLES E. BRIGGS, the lumber broker, had customers in Warren and Bristol, and he would occasionally take me along when calling on them. He, incidentally, was 6'-2" or so in height, whereas my grandmother LUELLA was under 5'.

There are many memories of the 30's in Barrington which are more indicative of the times than the people involved. Refrigeration was just becoming common in homes, and for many years we had regular deliveries of ice. And we kids knew from whence it came, as there was an operating ice house next to the skating pond. The best vegetables came from Charlie Jencks, who owned a farm across from our elem-

entary school and made deliveries with a horse and wagon. Another horse drawn enterprise was the rag man. However, we did have an ice cream truck, looking and sounding very much like today's.

There was daily steamship service between Providence and New York, the night boat being visible from our upstairs window. The only bumper stickers I recall from those days read "Repeal The 18th Amendment". And as FDR's programs for pulling the nation out of the depression took hold, we marched in an NRA parade and made ill-advised comments about the work being done by WPA workers.

Grandmother LUELLA suffered a stroke in 1938, and both grandparents moved in with us. It was grandfather who passed away first, however; he died in 1938, and she lived until 1940. Having both her parents living with us during their last years, with one requiring constant care, must have been very hard on my mother; and it evidently made a lasting impression on her. For, in her own later years, she would not consider moving in with me and my family.

As the nation recovered from the depression, my father regained his job in the chemical laboratory associated with the dye house at J&P Coats, a job which appeared to consist mainly of finding dyes which would be colorfast on various fabrics. Mother became a full time Latin teacher at Barrington High School, graciously waiting to do this until I had finished with that subject.

Graduating from high school a few months after the United States' entry into WWII, I entered Worcester Polytechnic Institute and enlisted in the Navy, which service sent me right back to college. Eventually I entered the U.S. Coast Guard Academy, graduating in 1948 in a class of 52 men.

Thus began a life of travel and moving, a life which would have seemed strange to my ancestors. All those people whom we met in Parts IV and V and earlier in this chapter had, for 328 years, remained southeast of a line between New London, Connecticut and Amesbury, Massachusetts.

After one ship and two shore assignments, mostly in the Pacific or on the West Coast, I arrived in New York in the summer of 1952 to work in the District Office. I was working with Irving Apgar, a friend and Academy classmate; and he and his wife invited me to stay with them in Cranford until I located an apartment. I was doing this, paying a modest rent plus buying the beer, and commuting on the Jersey Central, when Irv's wife, Mary Lou (McCredie) Apgar, walked into that bridal shower at the home of GRACE ELEANOR HARKRADER.

-

Chapter 20

TO THE PRESENT

GRACE and I actually met on August 31, 1952 and spent the afternoon at Yankee Stadium watching the Yankees and the Washington Senators, a team which is now the Minnesota Twins. On April 11 of the following year we were married at the Methodist Church in Westfield. A look at the book of wedding pictures reminds us that, although all four of our parents were present, only one of our grandparents, ALICE (MCGREW) HARKRADER, was still alive. And, at the other end of the age spectrum, there is a picture of two of GRACE's nephews, ages 6 and 3, admiring her gown. Both are physicians today.

When one moves frequently, as we did, the easiest way to remember when something happened is to remember where you lived at the time. So I'll use that as a reference point.

In September of 1953 my Aunt Helen, a lady with a wonderful sense of humor but unfortunately also with a chronic asthmatic condition, died in New York. Later that year we moved to Bristol, Rhode Island, the old headquarters of King Philip of the Wampanoags who had caused our early ancestors so much grief. (In fairness, we must admit that our ancestors had given him a few problems, too). It was while we were there that our first child, CHARLES BRIGGS HATHAWAY, JR., was born in Providence.

In 1954 we moved to Groton, Connecticut, and then in early 1956 to Staten Island. Our second child, BARBARA KATHRYN HATHAWAY, was born there; and it was while we were living there that GRACE's sister Nancy was married to Edwin Skorge in Westfield. That wedding was at the Harkrader home on Kimball Avenue, and not too long after that WILBUR and KATHRYN sold that house and moved a short distance to Endor Lane. It was while we were living on Staten Island that we began a 17 year association with the Lutheran Church, sort of a switch from the church of the early McGrews to that of the early Harkraders.

In the fall of 1959 we moved to Seattle, with GRACE and the children spending a couple of months in Westfield while I went on to find a new home. CHARLIE entered kindergarten that year; and, as a result of this two stage move, when he entered the first grade in Seattle the next year he was in his fourth school with his fifth teacher. KATHRYN (BEEBE) HARKRADER died suddenly in 1961. She and WILBUR had visited us the year before, as had my parents; and WILBUR came out again later. Later in 1962 he remarried, to Elsie Rost, a longtime friend of the family.

The years since our wedding in 1953 have been years of

rapid and significant changes in the world; and that period from 1959 to 1964 when we were in Seattle and then in Astoria, Oregon was particularly full of major happenings. The Boeing plant in Seattle was building many strange looking aircraft with three propellor-less engines mounted on the tail. (The 727 obviously could never fly!) John Glenn orbited the earth three times, coincidentally during the exact time that I was on a Northwest Airlines flight from Seattle to Great Falls, Montana. There was the Cuban missile showdown; and between that and his assassination in Dallas, John F. Kennedy visited Astoria to a warm welcome. And along about this time the Beatles arrived on the scene.

In 1964 it was back to the East Coast, with stops enroute to visit GRACE's sisters' families: the Skorges in Fairfield, Iowa where Ed was attending Parsons College, and the Johnsons in Jamestown, New York. We rented a house in the small town of Dover, Massachusetts, and there we discovered that many of our civilian friends moved just as often as we did. In early 1967 my father, HENRY HATHAWAY, suffered a stroke, and he died in April of that year. From the fall of '67 to the fall of '68 I was in Vietnam, with the family remaining in Dover.

Late in 1968 we left for a four year assignment in Honolulu. There we had visitors: WILBUR, the Stiles, Julia Hawley, GRACE's lifelong friend Betty Jane Trumpbour, and the Quinns, our neighbors from Astoria, just to name a few. CHARLIE graduated from Iolani School in Honolulu, he and BARBARA both having had the experience, hopefully a valuable one, of being in an ethnic minority for four years. Making his college selection without the opportunity of visiting mainland colleges, CHARLIE became the second of at least four family members to attend Hamilton College in Clinton, New York.

From Honolulu, we moved to Governor's Island, New York for two years. BARBARA attended Stuyvesant High School, which had only recently become coed and still required all students to take the metalworking shop course. Then it was on to Fairfax County, Virginia, where she graduated from Fort Hunt High. It was while we were in Virginia that our remaining parents realized that they could no longer keep up their homes. WILBUR HARKRADER's second wife, Elsie, died in 1975, and WILBUR eventually sold the Endor Lane house and was soon established at Medford Leas, a continuing care retirement home in Medford, New Jersey. DORIS HATHAWAY, my mother, sold the house in Barrington and moved to a nursing home in the adjacent town of Warren.

In 1976 BARBARA entered Mount Holyoke College, and GRACE and I moved to Cape May, New Jersey with just two years left before mandatory 30 year retirement from the Coast Guard. 1978 came, and we remained in Cape May, buying

a house in town. GRACE started a succesful career in real estate; and I became a member of several county and city boards. Although we did not know it at the time, we were in the area which had once been the home of the Newtons, whose daughters had married into the McGrews. Many years later, when I did become aware of the Newton connection, I also realized that several of our friends and acquaintances in Cape May, such as the Hands, were also from families which had intermarried with Newtons.

WILBUR HARKRADER may have moved to a retirement home, but he had not lost his interest in his family and its happenings. In 1976 we took him to the wedding of Karen Nolte and Peter McNulty, and two years later we took him to the wedding of Erik Johnson and Robin Fenstemaker. In 1977 his daughters put on an 80th birthday party for him at Medford Leas. WILBUR died in 1982, the last of our parents to go, my mother, DORIS SNOW (BRIGGS) HATHAWAY, having passed away in 1980.

While in Cape May we attended a couple of other family weddings in New Jersey: Ralph Skorge and Laurie Samaritano in 1983; and in 1985 his mother Nancy, divorced from Edwin, to Ray Schroeder, whom she had met while taking WILBUR on a trip to Bermuda. The latter ceremony took place the day after Hurricane Gloria had come up the coast and left, among other things, a large sycamore tree leaning on our house. On returning from the wedding we found that the town had removed the tree.

In November of 1989 CHARLIE married Leora Wartofsky in a Washington, D.C. ceremony attended by many aunts, uncles and cousins. The years since 1953 have seen a marked increase in career opportunities for women; and CHARLIE now has a wife who is a physician and a sister who is a lawyer. Among other ladies in the expanded family are two chemists: Nancy (Stiles) Gordon and Patricia Johnson.

It is now 1991. GRACE and I are in Chatham on Cape Cod, where we moved in 1986. Our parents' generation has disappeared with the notable exception of Dr. M.K. (Bus) Harkrader, still practicing dentistry in Westfield at the age of 85. Our generation, the last to have a childhood without television, is doing fairly well at keeping up with the times. Looking at the next two generations, Dr. Jonas Johnson, the six year old in our wedding book, has three sons, the oldest of whom is about to enter college at Lehigh, about 20 miles from Maxatawney, where JOHANNES HERRGEROEDER first settled in 1733.

Our two children have lived in many places and have travelled extensively, once meeting in the London airport while travelling in opposite directions. However, there must be some sort of homing instinct at work. Both, on

completing college, went on to graduate school in the same areas where they had completed high school; and today both are living and working in the cities in which they were born: BARBARA in New York City; and CHARLIE in Providence where he, his father and his grandmother had been born, and where his great-great-great-great-great-great-great-great grandfather had been rebuked by Roger Williams for neglecting to obtain a marriage license.

-

Chapter 21

AUNTS, UNCLES AND COUSINS

For seventeen chapters we briefly described how many different families have combined to produce four; then in the last three chapters we went in the opposite direction, seeing the descendants of those four expand into more families. If we call the Beebe, Harkrader, Briggs and Hathaway families of 1891 the first generation, we are well into the fifth generation 100 years later.

Having come this far, it would be wasteful not to list all those who are in these last five generations and who share some of the ancestry which we've covered. This is best done with simple listings or tables, and that's what will be found on the next few pages.

Although these last chapters start with eight people or four families, we're actually going to include descendants of nine people. NELLIE VIRGINIA BRUSH was married twice and had children by both husbands; and there has been some contact over the years among the descendants of both of these marriages.

Rather than try to include five generations in one chart, the relationships are presented two generations at a time: I - II, II - III, etc ;

Where an individual was married more than once, only the latest spouse and/or the spouse who was parent of the next generation will be listed.

PARENTS

I

TULLIS TALMAGE HARKRADER
 7-22-1875 -- 2-9-1944
 m 7-25-1896
 ALICE MCGREW
 11-13-1874 -- 7-11-1963

George Shepard Baird
 2-4-1866 -- 10-16-1886
 m 5-8-1883
 NELLIE VIRGINIA BRUSH
 10-31-1864 -- 4-10-1920
 m 2-16-1892
 GEORGE HAVERMEYER BEEBE
 7-22-1865 -- 12-24-1940

CHARLES WILLARD HATHAWAY
 11-3-1859 -- 2-22-1914
 m 1-5-1887
 SARAH ABBOT BUSHBY
 7-7-1858 -- 2-16-1934

CHARLES EDMUND BRIGGS
 11-28-1865 -- 9-14-1938
 m 9-24-1890
 LUELLA ERMINIE SNOW
 10-4-1862 -- 7-12-1940

CHILDREN

II

WILBUR TALMAGE HARKRADER
 5-14-1897 -- 11-30-1982
 Mildred Harkrader
 11-11-1900 -- - -1969
 Paul Harkrader
 - -1902 -- 8-14-1907
 Milton Keene Harkrader
 9-25-1906 --

Georgia Orphia Baird
 3-15-1885 -- 6-10-1929
 Julia Shepard Baird
 7-7-1886 -- 4-3-1927
 Grace Benedict Beebe
 3-25-1893 -- 10-4-1985
 KATHRYN BEEBE
 1-29-1898 -- 3-10-1961

HENRY BUSHBY HATHAWAY
 2-7-1891 -- 4-20-1967

DORIS SNOW BRIGGS
 11-4-1891 -- 7-15-1980
 Helen Harriet Briggs
 8-16-1893 -- 9-14-1953

* * *

II

KATHRYN BEEBE
 1-29-1898 -- 3-10-1961
 m 10-12-1921
 WILBUR TALMAGE HARKRADER
 5-14-1897 -- 11-3^d-1982
 m - -1962
 Elsie (Christopher) Rost
 - -1895 -- 1-26-1975

Frank Madison Snyder
 - - -- - -
 m
 Mildred Harkrader
 11-11-1900 -- - -1969
 m - -
 William Cox
 - - -- - -

Milton Keene Harkrader
 9-25-1906 --
 m - -
 Elizabeth Evans
 3-28-1907 -- 12-17-1978

Georgia Orphia Baird
 3-15-1885 -- 6-10-1929
 m 11-21-1908
 Frederick Sampson Tipson
 1-21-1886 -- 1-2-1964
 m - -
 Mary Valentine
 4-17-1896 -- 1-24-1976

Lynn Darling Stiles
 1-3-1890 -- - -1976
 m 12-18-1911
 Grace Benedict Beebe
 3-25-1893 -- 10-4-1985

HENRY BUSHBY HATHAWAY
 2-7-1891 -- 4-20-1967
 m 8-7-1919
 DORIS SNOW BRIGGS
 11-4-1891 -- 7-15-1980

III

Kathryn Alice Harkrader
 10-16-1923 --
 GRACE ELEANOR HARKRADER
 9-19-1926 --
 Nancy Harkrader
 2-10-1931 --

Frank Lee Snyder
 4-30-1926 --
 Jeanne Snyder
 3-1-1928 --

Elizabeth Ann Harkrader
 2-2-1935 --
 Milton Keene Harkrader, Jr.
 4-9-1937 --

Ada Virginia Tipson
 2-23-1913 -- c1968
 Lynn Baird Tipson
 12-20-1919 --

William Hathaway Stiles
 4-9-1913 --

CHARLES BRIGGS HATHAWAY
 10-27-1924 --

* * *

III

Jerome Norman Johnson
 7-26-1920 --
 m 2-28-1944
 Kathryn Alice Harkrader
 10-16-1923 --

CHARLES BRIGGS HATHAWAY
 10-27-1924 --
 m 4-11-1953
 GRACE ELEANOR HARKRADER
 9-19-1926 --

Edwin Trygve Skorge
 6-8-1925 -- 9-23-1990
 m 3-9-1957; (divorced)
 Nancy Harkrader
 2-10-1931 --
 m 9-28-1985
 Raymond Schroeder
 1-16-1932 --

Claire Marion VanDoren
 12-24-1924 -- 8-19-1990
 m 12-5-1946
 Frank Lee Snyder
 4-30-1926 --
 m 1-5-1991
 Jean Yvonne (Farley) Castanien
 - - - -

George William Nolte
 2-20-1926 --
 m 2-25-1950
 Jeanne Snyder
 3-1-1928 --

IV

Jonas Talmadge Johnson
 1-3-1947 --
 David Norman Johnson
 5-20-1949 --
 Elizabeth Christine Johnson
 12-23-1952 --
 Erik Harkrader Johnson
 2-3-1955 --

CHARLES BRIGGS HATHAWAY, JR.
 5-22-1954 --
 BARBARA KATHRYN HATHAWAY
 8-13-1958 --

Ralph Trygve Skorge
 11-4-1958 --
 Judith Grace Skorge
 10-7-1962 --

Craig Lee Snyder
 1-27-1948 --
 Linda Lee Snyder
 8-20-1949 --
 James Todd Snyder
 8-19-1952 --
 Steven David Snyder
 1-1-1961 --

Karen Nolte
 3-5-1952 --
 Deborah Lynn Nolte
 5-1-1955

(III-IV continued next page)

Milton Keene Harkrader, Jr.
4-9-1937 --
m 6-25-1960
Nina Salo
10-9-1937 --

Nina Elizabeth Harkrader
10-14-1961 --
Milton Keene Harkrader, III
8-9-1964 --
Eric Harkrader
11-11-1975 --

Elizabeth Ann Harkrader
2-2-1935 --
m 7-21-1956
George Howell
- - -

Katherine Elizabeth Howell
3-23-1960 --
Sarah Howell
6-11-1965 --

William Hathaway Stiles
4-9-1913 --
m 1-22-1943
Nancy B. Whiton
9-29-1917 --

Nancy Lincoln Stiles
4-6-1946 --

Ada Virginia Tipson
2-23-1913 --
m 7-3-1935
Douglas B. Hendrickson
12-4-1910 --

Joan Hendrickson
12-9-1937 --

Lynn Baird Tipson
12-20-1919 --
m 6-23-1941
Yvonne Gaston
10-2-1919 --

Lynn Baird Tipson, Jr.
10-22-1943 --
Kenneth Gaston Tipson
4-5-1946 -- 1-7-1952
Frederick Sampson Tipson, II
4-14-1947 --
David Safford Tipson
4-6-1950 --
Suzy Gerard Tipson
2-15-1955 --

* * *

IV

Jonas Talmadge Johnson
 1-3-1947 --
 m 12-22-1968
 Janis Ruth Carnahan
 8-29-1947 --

David Norman Johnson
 5-20-1949 --
 m - -
 Patricia Marie Garfield
 6-1-1949 --

Elizabeth Christine Johnson
 12-23-1952 --
 m 9-17-1988
 Philip Kirk Jensen
 4-28-1940 --

Erik Harkrader Johnson
 2-3-1955 --
 m 12-23-1978
 Robin Fenstermaker
 11-19-1954 --

CHARLES BRIGGS HATHAWAY, JR.
 5-22-1954 --
 m 11-5-1989
 Leora Wartofsky
 1-15-1960 --

BARBARA KATHRYN HATHAWAY
 8-13-1958 --

V

Olin Talmadge Johnson
 10-9-1972 --
 Rurik Carnahan Johnson
 2-26-1976 --
 Ivar Norman Johnson
 5-21-1979 --

Damien Edward Johnson
 3-30-1977 --
 Tullis Garfield Johnson
 6-21-1978 --
 Lukas Norman Johnson
 10-9-1981 --

Clayton Johnson
 8-3-1984 --
 Reed Johnson
 4-13-1986 --

(IV and V continued next page)

Ralph Trygve Skorge
11-4-1958 --
m 12-3-1983
Laurie Samaritano
3-15-1960 --

Judith Grace Skorge
10-7-1962 --

Craig Lee Snyder
1-27-1948 --
m 12-28-1969
Penny Lynn Jenness
11-25-1947 --

Linda Lee Snyder
8-20-1949 --
m 6-6-1970
Robert Henderson
12-28-1947 --

James Todd Snyder
8-19-1952 --
m 8-19-1978
Karen Caroline Glick
- - --

Steven David Snyder
1-1-1961 --
m 8-13-1989
Cynthia Jones
- - --

Karen Nolte
3-5-1952 --
m 8-14-1976
Peter John McNulty
4-14-1954 --

Bryan Gavin Skorge
9-6-1986 --
Leanne May Skorge
12-3-1988 --

Craig Lee Snyder, Jr.
10-22-1972 --
Christine Lynn Snyder
12-26-1974 --

Julia Henderson
11-23-1975 --
Shanna Henderson
4-28-1978 --
Dana Henderson
7-2-1982 --

Annmarie Lee Snyder
8-17-1990 --

Sean Michael McNulty
1-24-1984 --
Caitlin Mary McNulty
1-19-1987 --

(IV and V continued next page)

Nina Elizabeth Harkrader
10-14-1961 --
m 4-5-1986
John David Meyer
10-19-1959 --

Milton Keene Harkrader, III
8-9-1964 --

Eric Harkrader
11-11-1975 --

Katherine Elizabeth Howell
3-23-1960 --
m 9-9-1989
Thomas Lee Roehlke
- - --

Sarah Howell
6-11-1965 --

Robert Rowan
7-12-1946 -- 9-21-1978
m 6-23-1968
Nancy Lincoln Stiles
4-6-1946 --
m 8-10-1985
Kenneth Gordon
9-25-1938 --

Marian Stiles Rowan
7-29-1974 --
Robert William Rowan
3-31-1977 --

(IV and V continued next page)

Peter Boor 4-30-1937 -- m 7-2-1960; (divorced)	David Peter Boor 6-12-1961 --
Joan Hendrickson 12-9-1937 -- m 1-1-1984	Thomas Boor 9-8-1963 --
Richard Paules 1-16-1939 -- 6-4-1986	Jonathan Douglas Boor 10-20-1971 --
Lynn Baird Tipson, Jr. 10-22-1943 -- m 5- -1970	David Frederick Tipson 9-7-1973 --
Sarah Oden 3-9-1945 --	Elizabeth Louise Tipson 1-24-1979 --
Frederick Sampson Tipson, II 4-14-1947 -- m 6-29-1969	Andrew Maish Tipson 10-1-1977 --
Laura Maish 5-29-1947 --	Katherine Baird Tipson 6-12-1979 --
	Dana Tipson 12-21-1986 --
David Safford Tipson 4-6-1950 -- m 11- -1983	Mark Kenneth Tipson 8-30-1985 --
Catherine Conway - - -	
Suzy Gerard Tipson 2-15-1955 -- m 8-7-1976	Philip S. Hall 12-30-1982 --
Joseph A. Hall, Jr. 1-11-1953 --	Frederick Hall 4-6-1987 --

* * *

These people, in addition to being parents of succeeding generations, have been successfully engaged in a wide variety of occupations. Among them are doctors, dentists, scientists, nurses, contractors, teachers, office managers, advertising executives, lawyers and bankers. As far as we know, none of the original nine were college graduates, and

several of their descendants have done very well without extensive formal education. However, many of the later generations have been college graduates, some with advanced degrees. Here, listed by college, are those descendants and spouses of whom we are aware, with apologies to those about whom we did not have the information. (A bachelor,s degree or equivalent is assumed unless otherwise indicated).

Adelphi College

Jeanne Snyder

Allegheny College

David Norman Johnson

Boston University

Nancy Lincoln Stiles (PhD)

Brown University

Doris Snow Briggs (B.A. & M.A.)

Helen Harriet Briggs

Bucknell University

Nancy Harkrader

Joan Hendrickson

Catherine Elizabeth Howell

California, University of, at Hayward

Elizabeth Christine Johnson (M.B.A.)

Chicago, University of

Kenneth Gordon (PhD)

Colgate University

Robin Fenstemaker

Columbia University

Elizabeth Ann Harkrader

Cornell University

John David Meyer (M.D.)

Dartmouth College

Kenneth Gordon

Jonas Talmadge Johnson

Duquesne University

Janis Ruth Carnahan (CPA)

Fairfield University

Nina Salo (M.A.)

George Washington University

Barbara Kathryn Hathaway (J.D.)

Hamilton College

Milton Keene Harkrader, Jr.
Nina Elizabeth Harkrader
Charles Briggs Hathaway, Jr.
Erik Harkrader Johnson
John David Meyer

Harvard University

Robert Rowan (PhD)

Hawaii, University of

Charles Briggs Hathaway, Jr. (M.S.)

Hiram College

Jerome Norman Johnson

Indiana University

Judith Grace Skorge

Johnson and Wales College

Thomas Boor

Kenyon College

Milton Keene Harkrader, III
Suzy Gerard Tipson

Lafayette College

William Hathaway Stiles

Lehigh University

George Howell

Lowell Textile Institute

Henry Bushby Hathaway (Associate)

Mary Baldwin College

Sarah Oden

Maryland, University of

Leora Wartofsky

Mount Holyoke College

Barbara Kathryn Hathaway
Nancy Lincoln Stiles

New School For Social Research of New York

Patricia Marie Garfield (M.A.)

New York Medical College

David Norman Johnson (M.D.)

New York, State University of, at Buffalo

Patricia Marie Garfield (PhD)

New York University

Lynn Baird Tipson (M.B.A.)

Parsons College

Edwin Trygve Skorge

Pennsylvania, University of

Joseph A. Hall, Jr. (M.B.A.)

Milton Keene Harkrader, Jr. (M.B.A.)

Wilbur Talmage Harkrader (D.D.S.)

Pomona College

Robert Rowan

Princeton University

Philip Kirk Jensen

Lynn Baird Tipson

Lynn Baird Tipson, Jr.

Roanoke College

David Safford Tipson

Rutgers University

Douglas B. Hendrickson

Sacred Heart University

Nina Salo

St. Bonaventure University

Patricia Marie Garfield

Sarah Lawrence College

Sarah Howell

Smith College

Kathryn Alice Harkrader

Stanford University

Robin Fenstermaker (M.A.)

Philip Kirk Jensen (L.L.D.)

Frederick Sampson Tipson

Susquehanna University

David Peter Boor

Syracuse University

Janis Ruth Carnahan (M.A.)

Laura Maish

Laurie Samaritano

Ralph Trygve Skorge

Thomas Jefferson University

Charles Briggs Hathaway, Jr. (PhD)

U.S. Coast Guard Academy
Charles Briggs Hathaway

Upstate New York Medical School
Jonas Talmadge Johnson (M.D.)

Vassar College
Yvonne Gaston

Virginia, University of
Frederick Sampson Tipson, II (PhD, J.D.)

Wake Forest University
Leora Wartofsky (M.D.)

Washington University
Milton Keene Harkrader (D.D.S.)

Wellesley College
Nancy B. Whiton

Western Reserve University
Jerome Norman Johnson (D.D.S.)

William and Mary, College of
Elizabeth Christine Johnson
Suzy Gerard Tipson (J.D.)

Wisconsin, University of
Grace Eleanor Harkrader

Wooster, College of
Janis Ruth Carnahan

Yale University
Sarah Oden (M.A.)
Frederick Sampson Tipson, II (M.A.)
Lynn Baird Tipson, Jr. (M.A., PhD)

PART VII

Appendices

....., containing some of the data and sources on which the preceding chapters were based.

Appendix A

ANCESTOR TABLE

The Ancestor Table, or Ahnentafel as it is sometimes called, is simply a listing of all known ancestors, listed in order from the couple whose ancestry is being traced. This table gives vital statistics (birth, marriages, death) for each person.

The Ancestor Table assigns a number to each ancestor, thus eliminating confusion between people with the same names and showing the precise relationship between the ancestors. There are three basic rules to this numbering system:

Men have even numbers; women have odd numbers.

A wife's number is one higher than her husband's.

Multiply any person's number by two to get the number of that person's father.

While this table is based on the ancestries of Charles Briggs Hathaway and Grace Eleanor (Harkrader) Hathaway, related families can use it by entering as indicated below and then following the numbering rules:

Alice (Harkrader) Johnson, Nancy (Harkrader) Schroeder and their descendants enter at 6 and 7.

Milton Keene Harkrader, Milton Keene Harkrader, Jr., Elizabeth (Harkrader) Howell, Frank Lee Snyder, Jeanne (Snyder) Nolte and their descendants enter at 12 and 13.

William Hathaway Stiles and his descendants enter at 14 and 15 and also at 1024 and 1025.

Lynn Baird Tipson, Joan Hendrickson and their descendants enter at 15.

Marriage information is given in the husband's listing only except where the wife was married more than once, in which case all her marriages are listed. Because of marriages between cousins, some people will have more than one number; in this case only the first listing gives the vital statistics, subsequent listings giving only the name and prior numbers.

Where numbers are omitted or information is missing it is because we have not identified the person.

ANCESTOR TABLE

- 2-CHARLES BRIGGS HATHAWAY: b 10-27-1924 Providence RI; m #3, 4-11-1953 Westfield NJ.
- 3-GRACE ELEANOR HARKRADER: b 9-19-1926 Westfield NJ.
- - -
- 4-HENRY BUSHBY HATHAWAY: b 2-7-1891 Salem MA; m #5, 8-7-1919 Providence RI; d 4-20-1967 Warren RI.
- 5-DORIS SNOW BRIGGS: b 11-4-1891 Providence RI; d 7-15-1980 Warren RI.
- 6-WILBUR TALMAGE HARKRADER: b 5-14-1817 New York NY; m(1) #7, 10-12-1921 Westfield NJ; m(2) Elsie (Christopher) wid Rost 1962; d 11-30-1982 Medford NJ.
- 7-KATHRYN BEEBE: b 1-29-1898 Brooklyn NY; d 3-10-1961 Westfield NJ.
- - -
- 8-CHARLES WILLARD HATHAWAY: b 11-3-1859 Beverly MA; m #9, 1-5-1887; d 2-22-1914 Salem MA.
- 9-SARAH ABBOT BUSHBY: b 7-7-1858 Peabody MA; d 2-16-1934 Salem MA.
- 10-CHARLES EDMUND BRIGGS: b 11-28-1865 RI; m #11, 9-24-1890 Providence RI; d 9-14-1938 Barrington RI.
- 11-LUELLA ERMINIE SNOW: b 10-4-1862 Warwick RI; d 7-12-1940 Barrington.
- 12-TULLIS TALMAGE HARKRADER: b 7-22-1875 Middletown OH; m #13, 7-25-1896 Cincinnati OH/ 11-17-1896 Newport KY; d 2-9-1944 Westfield NJ
- 13-ALICE MCGREW: b 11-13-1874 Cincinnati OH; d 7-11-1963 Westfield NJ.
- 14-GEORGE HAVERMEYER BEEBE: b 7-22-1865 Bethel CT; m #15; d 12-24-1940.
- 15-NELLIE VIRGINIA BRUSH: b 10-31-1864 Danbury CT; m(1) George Shephard Baird 5-8-1883 Danbury CT; m(2) #14, 2-16-1892 Bethel CT; d 4-10-1920, bur Bethel CT.
- - -
- 16-EPHRAIM HATHAWAY: b 1-13-1816 Beverly MA; m #17; d 9-5-1892 Beverly.
- 17-PAMELIA MARTIN: b 4-9-1815 Amesbury MA; d 12-15-1904.
- 18-HENRY BUSHBY, JR.: b 3-24-1830 Danvers MA; m #19, 5-30-1852 Salem MA; d 12-25-1902.
- 19-GRACE WILLIAMS: b 5-11-1831; d 6-11-1898.
- 20-CHARLES HENRY BRIGGS: b 4-14-1844 S.Kingstown RI; m(1) #21, 2-27-1865; m(2) Mary Stevenson; d - -
- 21-SUSAN HARRIETT BABCOCK: b 11-3-1844 Kingston RI; d 11-7-1900 Stonington CT.
- 22-WILLIAM G. SNOW: b 1819 Smithfield RI; m #23; d 7-31-1908 Providence RI.
- 23-NANCY INMAN: b 1819 Burrilville RI; d 8-5-1908 Providence RI.
- 24-ELLISON T. HARKRADER: b 1850 OH; m(1) Margaret A. Murray 10-6-1870; m(2) #25; m(3) Jessie ____; d - .
- 25-SUSAN EMMA HILL: b c1852 IN; d 8-22-1943 NJ.
- 26-PAUL RUST MCGREW: b 6-29-1812 Milford OH; m(1) Martha A. Maddock c1834; m(2) #27; d 5-11-1897, bur Amelia OH.
- 27-SUSAN ANN JONES: b 10-8-1844 Mt.Washington OH; d 2-18-1929.
- 28-DAVID NICHOLAS BEEBE: b 1-31-1837 Bethel CT; m #29, 9-10-1861; d 10-27-1870.
- 29-JULIA REBECCA BENEDICT: b 9-6-1839 Bethel CT; m(1) #28; m(2) Clement E. Beebe 6-18-1872; d-- .
- 30-CHESTER CROSBY BRUSH: b 3-17-1838; m #31, 4-29-1858; d 7-27-1904.
- 31-EMILY FRANCES KEELER: b 8-5-1837; d 3-23-1905.
- - -
- 32-JOHN HATHAWAY: b 1784 Marblehead MA; m #33, 2-19-1807 Marblehead; d 12-23-1849 Beverly MA.

33-ELIZABETH WHIPPEN: b c1783, bap 11-2-1788; d 11-16-1822.
 34-AQUILA MARTIN: b 5-18-1782 Amesbury MA; m #35; d 3-7-1832.
 35-EUNICE JOSLYN: b 5-19-1789 Pembroke MA; d--.
 36-HENRY BUSHBY: b 3-9-1805 Danvers MA; m #37, 2-24-1830; d 10-2-1883.
 37-MARY ABBOT: b 8-15-1805 Billerica MA; d 5- -1876.
 40-CHARLES BRIGGS: b 6-20-1817 S.Kingstown RI; m #41, 12-25-1839;
 d 8-24-1881 S.Kingstown.
 41-MARTHA SHERMAN LARKIN: b 5-8-1820 S.Kingstown RI; d 7-12-1894
 S.Kingstown.
 42-EDMUND BABCOCK: b 10-2-1816 Charlestown RI; m #43, 5-1-1843 Kingston
 RI; d 2-14-1881 Wakefield RI.
 43-MARTHA BABCOCK: b 9-13-1823 S.Kingstown RI; d --- .
 44-EDWARD SNOW: b 6-27-1777; m #45, 8-18-1805 Portsmouth RI;
 d 4-28-1829.
 45-PATIENCE IRISH: b 1787; d 1875 Providence RI.
 48-ELLISON HARKRADER: b 8-11-1811 Wythe Co VA; m(1) #41, 7-16-1835 But-
 ler Co OH; m(2) Mina ___ c1887; d 11-18-1898 Lemon Twp Butler Co OH.
 49-MARGARET TULLIS: b 1814 OH; d before 1886.
 52-WILLIAM MCGREW: b 5-5-1786 Baltimore MD; m #53; d 1872 Amelia OH.
 53-RACHEL NEWTON: b 10-7-1784 Cape May NJ; d 10-25-1870 OH.
 54-JOHN JONES: b 2-1-1803 NC/OH; m #55; d 2-20-1859 Amelia OH
 55-ELEANOR AUSTIN: b 10-24-1805 NC/OH; d 9-6-1882 Amelia OH.
 56-ASEL BEEBE: b 9-7-1794 Bethel CT; m #57, 5-24-1821; d 2-8-1885
 Bethel CT.
 57-LUCIA FAIRCHILD: b 3-9-1801; d 12-28-1873.
 58-CYRIL HARRISON BENEDICT: b 2-22-1808 Bethel CT; m #59, 11-9-1837;
 d 2-15-1883 Bethel CT.
 59-ANGELINE JUDD: b 2-1-1811; d 8-12-1882.
 60-FLOYD BRUSH: b 2-1-1804 Ridgefield CT; m #61, 5-26-1827; d 6-21-1887
 61-FANNY CROSBY: b 3-6-1808 Danbury CT; d 2-5-1874.
 62-RUFUS KEELER: b 1-18-1801 Ridgefield CT; m(1) Jane Lewis Sturges 10-
 10-1826; m(2) #63, 11-16-1829 Yonkers NY; d 3-12-1877 Ridgefield.
 63-ANN ELIZA FOWLER: b 11-27-1808; d 1-21-1883.
 - - -
 64-JOHN GARDNER HATHAWAY: b 8-14-1762 Freetown MA; m #65, 1-29-1784
 Marblehead MA; d 4-13-1843 Marblehead.
 65-ELEANOR STONE: b---; d 9-7-1842 Marblehead MA.
 66-GEORGE WHIPPEN: b c1751; m #67, 5-12-1774 Marblehead MA;
 d 10-13-1835 Marblehead.
 67-EUNICE BOWDEN: bap 9-12-1756 Marblehead MA; d 1-9-1816 Marblehead.
 68-AQUILA MARTIN: b 2-19-1746 Amesbury MA; m #69, 10-3-1769 Salisbury
 69-PRISCILLA CART: b----; d 10-2-1839 Amesbury MA.
 70-JOHN JOSELYN: b 3-30-1761 Pembroke MA; m #71, 11-25-1784 Pembroke.
 71-LUCY LOUDEN: bap 4-18-1762.
 72-ASA BUSHBY: bap 7-8-1770 Marblehead MA; m #73, 5-12-1792 Danvers MA.
 73-LYDIA WILLSON: b 8-14-1765 Danvers MA.
 74-NATHAN ABBOT: b 11-18-1756 Andover MA; m #75, 5-22-1785 Danvers MA.
 75-MARGARET WILLSON: b 9-25-1760.
 80-SWEET BRIGGS: b 8-13-1782 S.Kingstown RI; m(1) #81; m(2) Sophia
 Bradford; d 10-17-1872 S.Kingstown.
 81-MARY COBB: b 6-23-1782.
 82-JOHN G. LARKIN: b 1796 S.Kingstown; m #83; d 1862 S.Kingstown.
 83-HANNAH SHERMAN: b c1788.
 84-JESSE BABCOCK: b 4-7-1785 Richmond RI; m #85, 3-7-1811 New Shoreham
 RI; d 8-19-1859 Kingston RI.

85-SALLY SHEFFIELD: b 2-26-1786 New Shoreham RI; d 2-19-1868 Kingston.
 86-PELEG BABCOCK: b 7-14-1774 S.Kingstown RI; m #87, 11-14-1818
 S.Kingstown; d 5-20-1845 S.Kingstown.
 87-SARAH POTTER:
 88-JAMES SNOW: b 12-30-1729; m #89, 3-26-1755; d 10-18-1812.
 89-HANNAH SEARLE: b 6-10-1733; d 11-14-1823.
 90-ISAAC IRISH: b 2-12-1746 Portsmouth RI; m #91; d c1836.
 91-PATIENCE _____:
 96-BENJAMIN HARKRADER: b 1-8-1786 PA/MD/VA; m(1) #97; m(2) Elizabeth -;
 d 1859 Warren Co OH.
 97-CATHERINE _____;
 104-ANDREW MCGREW: b 3-19-1760; m #105; d 8-5-1823, bur Milford OH.
 105-HANNAH RUST: b 9-9-1762; d 12-29-1822, bur Milford OH.
 106-EBENEZER NEWTON:
 112-ETHEL BEEBE: b 3-23-1765 Bethel CT; m #113, 4-26-1789; d 5-19-1812.
 113-NAOMI BARNUM: b c1766; d 6-2-1841.
 114-CLEMENT FAIRCHILD: b 5-2-1764; m #115.
 115-SARAH PLATT:
 116-OLIVER STARR BENEDICT: b 5-28-1786 Bethel CT; m #117, 6-1-1807;
 d 2-2-1859.
 117-REBECCA HICKOK: b 1-20-1781; d 10-31-1831.
 118-ELI JUDD: b 1779; m(1) Margaret ____; m(2) #119, 1806; d 5-5-1848.
 119-LUCY HOYT: b 7-28-1776; d 3-27-1841.
 120-PHILIP BRUSH: b 11-9-1767 LINY; m #121, 1786 Huntington LINY;
 d 1-5-1829.
 121-RUTH BRUSH: b 2-24-1766; d 1829 Southeast NY.
 122-THOMAS CROSBY: b 1-16-1768; m #123, 2-12-1786; d 2-16-1844 South-
 east NY.
 123-HANNAH SNOW: b 2-5-1770; d 2-24-1853 Southeast NY.
 124-JONAH KEELER: b 6-5-1772 Ridgefield CT; m #125, 12-10-1794; d 4-26-
 1836 Ridgefield.
 125-REBECCA RAYMOND: b 8-29-1773; d 2-26-1851 Ridgefield CT.
 126-BARNABAS FOWLER: b 1772; m #127; d 6-2-1847.
 127-SARAH ANN ODELL: b 10-30-1784; d 4-9-1862.
 - - -
 128-JOHN HATHAWAY: b 8-2-1717 Dartmouth MA; m(1) Zeruiah Hathaway 11-24-
 1748 Dartmouth; m(2) #129, int 10-9-1758; d c1800-1810.
 129-DEBORAH RUSSELL: b 11-17-1734 Dartmouth MA; d 1810-1820.
 134-JOSEPH BOWDEN: b 4-23-1725; m #135, c1750.
 135-LYDIA _____:
 136-JONATHAN MARTIN: b 1-16-1708 Amesbury MA; m #137, 2-12-1731 Amesbury
 137-DEBORAH WORTHEN: b 4-15-1712 Amesbury MA.
 144-JOHN BUSHBY: b-----; m #145, 2-6-1764 Salem MA.
 145-SARAH BROWN: bap 9-24-1738.
 146-BENJAMIN WILLSON: b-----; m #147, 11-28-1759 Lynn MA.
 147-LYDIA BANCROFT: b 5-1-1738 Lynn MA.
 148-ASA ABBOT: b 10-17-1721 Andover MA; m #149, 9-20-1744; d 12-23-1797.
 149-ELIZABETH ABBOT: b 6-29-1726; d 2-18-1819.
 160-SWEET BRIGGS: b c1756 N.Kingstown RI; m #161; d 10-23-1850 S.Kings-
 town RI.
 161-MARTHA TANNER: b -----; d 9-11-1840.
 164-JOHN LARKIN: b 1755; m #165; d 11-14-1821 S.Kingstown RI.
 165-PATIENCE GARDINER: b 12-14-1757; d 2-18-1850 S.Kingstown RI.
 166-DAVID SHERMAN: b -----; m #167, 11-26-1775; d 1825.
 167-HANNAH SHERMAN: b 1754; d 1845.

168-JESSE BABCOCK: b 4-19-1759 Richmond RI; m #169; d 1-17-1837 Shannock RI.
 169-HANNAH CROSS: b 3-20-1760; d 5-25-1838 Shannock RI.
 170-EDMUND SHEFFIELD: b ----; m #171; d 9-4-1812.
 171-SUSANNAH PERRY: b 1760; d 5-18-1829.
 172-PELEG BABCOCK: b 4-18-1742; m 173; d 6-7-1826.
 173-LUCY BABCOCK: b 12-15-1754.
 176-JOSEPH SNOW: b 9-7-1690 Bridgewater MA; m #177; d 7-24-1775 Providence RI.
 177-ELIZABETH FIELD: b 8-4-1698 Bridgewater MA; d 4-15-17-__.
 178-SOLOMON SEARLE: b ---; m #179, 4-18-1723 Bristol RI; d 2-17-1774.
 179-ELIZABETH GLADDING: b 8-6-1705.
 180-EDWARD IRISH: b 1-9-1721 Little Compton RI; m #181; d 12-1-1795.
 181-LOIS SANFORD: b 9-6-1722 Bristol RI.
 192-JOHANNES HERRGEROETER: b Ger; m(1)____; m(2) #193; d PA/MD/VA.
 193-ANNA MARIA DeHOF:
 224-LEMUEL BEEBE: b 4-11-1743 Danbury CT; m #225, 7-19-1764 Danbury; d 4-11-1813 Bethel CT.
 225-HANNAH DIBBLE: b c1747; d c1827.
 226-MATTHEW BARNUM: b 1736; m #227, 11-27-1760; d 5-13-1805.
 227-JANE DIBBLE:
 228-EBENEZER FAIRCHILD: b ----; m #229, 8-14-1751.
 229-SARAH KIMBERLY: b 8-31-1729 Newtown CT.
 232-OLIVER BENEDICT: b 11-17-1748 Danbury CT; m #233; d 10-28-1827.
 233-MARY STARR: b 1752; d 11-15-1839.
 234-EBENEZER HICKOK: b 9-1-1728; m #235; d 1-20-1818.
 235-MARY BENEDICT:
 236-DANIEL JUDD: b 8-11-1744; m #237, 1722; d 1-22-1820 Bethel CT.
 237-EUNICE DIKEMAN:
 238-JUSTUS HOYT: b c1744; m #239, c1766; d 4-3-1827.
 239-HANNAH WOOD: b c1748; d 4-15-1832.
 240-JOSHUA BRUSH: b 9-13-1743 Huntington LINY; m #241, 7-23-1764.
 241-MARGARET IRELAND: b c1747; m(1) #240, 7-23-1764; m(2) Robert Jarvis.
 242-JACOB BRUSH: b 9-6-1727 Huntington LINY; m #243, 10-4-1749 Huntington; d 4-6-1813 Southeast NY.
 243-SARAH PLATT: b 1732; d 12-23-1767 Huntington LINY.
 244-ABNER CROSBY: b 12-25-1744 Harwich MA; m #245, 1765; d 5-5-1813 Southeast NY.
 245-RUTH FOSTER: b 1750; d 10-1-1816 Southeast NY.
 246-WILLIAM SNOW: b 12-11-1736 Harwich MA; m #247.
 247-LYDIA (prob WIXON).
 248-MATTHEW KEELER: b 3-13-1724 Ridgefield CT; m #249, 1751; d 10-29-1795 Ridgefield.
 249-DEBORAH CLOSE: b 8-20-1733; d 6-4-1788.
 250-JOSIAH RAYMOND: b c1740 Norwalk CT; m #251, 11-5-1765 Norwalk; d 5-21-1827.
 251-MOLLY MERWINE: b 7-5-1744; d 5-19-1809.
 252-HENRY FOWLER: b Eastchester NY; m #253, 12-5-1764; d 180³~~5~~ Yonkers NY
 253-HANNAH FOWLER:
 254-JONATHAN ODELL: b 3-9-1758; m #255, 1783; d 1806.
 255-ELIZABETH BOWNE UNDERHILL: b 6-23-1760.
 - - -
 256-JOHN HATHAWAY: b 3-18-1687 Dartmouth MA; m #257, 11-18-1714 Sandwich MA; d 1739.
 257-ALICE LANDERS: b 4-15-1687 Sandwich MA.

258-JOSHUA RUSSELL: b 2-20-1710 Dartmouth MA; m #259, 3-9-1732 Dartmouth; d c1789.
 259-LYDIA SPOONER:
 268-FRANCIS BOWDEN: b ----; m #269, 9-22-1707 Marblehead MA.
 269-MARY BOOBYER: bap 4-28-1695 Marblehead MA; d 1748 Marblehead.
 272-JOHN MARTIN: b 2-4-1674 Amesbury MA; m #273, 7-15-1702 Amesbury.
 273-MARY WELLS: b 2-12-1672 Newbury MA.
 274-GEORGE WORTHEN: b 12-15-1669 Amesbury MA; m #275.
 275-ANNE _____:
 290-ELEAZAR BROWN: b 2-16-1690 Salisbury MA; m #291, 12-7-1716; d 1750.
 291-SARAH PUTNAM: b 9-26-1697.
 294-JOHN BANCROFT: b 6-25-1708; m #295, int 4-5-1731 Lynn MA.
 295-RUTH NEWHALL: b 9-12-1712.
 296-TIMOTHY ABBOT: b 6-20-1693 Andover MA; m #297, 12-9-1717; d 7-10-1766.
 297-MARY FOSTER: b 1-2-1698 Boxford MA.
 298-EPHRAIM ABBOT: b 8-6-1682; m #299, 1-6-1715; d 6-8-1748.
 299-SARAH HUNT:
 320-EBENEZER BRIGGS: b ---; m #321, 2-22-1746 E.Greenwich RI.
 321-ELEANOR SWEET: b 11-22-1727.
 322-WILLIAM TANNER: b 9-22-1712 N.Kingstown RI; m(1) Martha Hill c1734; m(2) Ann Sweet; m(3) #323; d 6-30-1778 Stephentown NY.
 323-DELIVERANCE BRIGGS: b ----; d 1-12-1813 Stephentown NY.
 330-CHRISTOPHER GARDINER: b 6-3-1726 S.Kingstown RI; m(1) #331, 9-16-1753 Middletown RI; m(2) Elizabeth Fones 2-18-1775; d 1812.
 331-MARY EASTON:
 332-DANIEL SHERMAN: b 11-27-1658 Portsmouth RI; m #333, 5-22-1735; d 1804.
 333-SUSANNAH EARLE:
 334-BENJAMIN SHERMAN: b c1712 S.Kingstown RI; m(1)____; m(2) #335, c1744; m(3) Sarah Elizabeth Cook 5-19-1771; d c1788.
 335-MARY SHERMAN: b 6-29-1714; d 5-12-1762.
 336-ELISHA BABCOCK: b 5-18-1718 S.Kingstown RI; m #337, 7-4-1744 Richmond RI.
 337-ELIZABETH PERRY: b 11-3-1719 Westerly RI.
 340-EZEKIEL SHEFFIELD: b 1-31-1720 New Shoreham RI; m (1) Hannah Westcott 5-4-1760; m(2) Mary Long 3-3-1771.
 341-(uncertain - Hannah Westcott or Mary Long)
 344-HEZEKIAH BABCOCK: b 3-25-1715 S.Kingstown RI; m 345, 1-3-1740 Newport RI; d 1798.
 345-MARY PECKHAM: b c1716; d 1796.
 346-GEORGE BABCOCK: b 12-29-1727 Westerly/Hopkinton RI; m #347, 6-26-1752 Stonington CT; d c1802.
 347-MEHITABLE WHEELER: b 9-5-1731.
 352-JOSEPH SNOW: b Bridgewater MA; m #353; d 10-10-1741 Bridgewater.
 353-HOPESTILL (possibly Alden).
 354-JOHN FIELD: b 2-20-1671 Providence RI; m #355, 11- -1697; d 1758.
 355-ELIZABETH AMES: b 9-6-1680; d 1739.
 358-WILLIAM GLADDING: b 7-23-1673 MA/RI; m #359.
 359-MARY _____.
 360-JOHN IRISH: b 5-1-1699 Little Compton RI; m #361, 5-10-1720; d 7- -1733.
 361-THANKFUL WILBUR: b 6-8-1700 Little Compton RI.
 362-JOHN SANFORD: b 5-5-1699 Portsmouth RI; m #363, 7-9-1722 Little Compton.

363-ELIZABETH PHILLIPS: b 9-26-1700.
 448-LEMUEL BEEBE: b 1710 Danbury CT; m #449.
 449-LYDIA TAYLOR:
 450-JOHN DIBBLE: b -----; m #451.
 451-SARAH _____.
 452-EPHRAIM BARNUM: b 6-10-1710; m#453; d 8- -1775.
 453-MEHITABLE _____.
 458-ABRAHAM KIMBERLY: b 4-29-1702 Stratford CT; m #459, 10-31-1725 New-
 town CT; d 6-1-1772 Newtown.
 459-ABIGAIL ADAMS: b c1702 CT/NY; d 10-30-1774 Newtown CT.
 464-BENJAMIN BENEDICT: b 1712; m #465, c1732; d 5-22-1797 Bethel CT.
 465-ABIGAIL PORTER: b 1708; d 4-27-1797.
 466-JOSEPH STARR:
 468-EBENEZER HICKOK: b c1692 Waterbury CT; m(1) Rebecca Keeler;
 m(2) wid Esther (Curtiss) Beach; d 7-8-1774.
 469-(uncertain - Rebecca Keeler or Esther Curtiss)
 470-ABRAHAM BENEDICT: b -----; m #471.
 471-SARAH HICKOK:
 472-PHINEAS JUDD: b ---; m #473; d 1777.
 473-DEBORAH TAYLOR:
 476-DRAKE HOYT: b 1717; m #477; d 4- -1805.
 477-HANNAH KNAPP: b 1720; d 6- -1793.
 480-JONATHAN BRUSH: b c1715 Huntington LINY; m #481, 8-26-1736 Hunting-
 ton; d 10-8-1787.
 481-ELIZABETH SMITH: b 9-27-1718; d 11-4-1796.
 482-JOSEPH IRELAND: b c1713; m #483, c1735; d 6- -1793 Huntington NY.
 483-ELIZABETH LOSEE: b c1712; d 1802.
 484-JACOB BRUSH: b c1689 Huntington LINY; m #485; d 10-15-1731.
 485-MARY _____.
 488-DAVID CROSBY: b 4-13-1709 Harwich MA; m #489, 6-19-1735; d 10-20-
 1793 Southeast NY.
 489-RELIANCE HOPKINS: b 11-17-1709 Harwich MA; d 2-25-1788 Southeast NY.
 490-NATHANIEL FOSTER: b 4-17-1725 Brewster MA; m(1) #491, 6-21-1746;
 m(2) Charity Knowlton; d 1787 Southeast NY.
 491-PHEBE WING: b 1-20-1726.
 492-JOHN SNOW: b 5-26-1700 Eastham MA; m #493, 10-12-1721 Eastham;
 d 7-15-1766 Brewster/Harwich MA.
 493-HANNAH MYRICK: b -----; d 2-16-1764 Harwich MA.
 496-JONAH KEELER: b 1690 Norwalk CT; m(1) #497, 11-5-1713; m(2) Sarah____
 ____; d 5-24-1767.
 497-RUTH SMITH:
 498-SOLOMON CLOSE: b 6-23-1706; m(1) #499; m(2) Rachel Osborn; d 7-31-
 1778.
 499-DEBORAH BRUSH: b 1707; d 9-26-1765.
 500-JABEZ RAYMOND: b 4-1-1705; m #501; d 1789.
 501-REBECCA PLATT.
 502-THOMAS MERWIN: bap 7-15-1694 Fairfield CT; m(1) Ruth Morehouse,
 8- -1717 Fairfield; m(2) #503, 7- -1742; d 11-27-1769 Green-
 field CT.
 503-MARY (_____) wid Smith.
 504-JOHN FOWLER: b c 1689 Eastchester NY; m #505; d 1768 Eastchester.
 505-ELIZABETH LYON: b c1717 Greenwich CT; d after 1768.
 506-BENJAMIN FOWLER: b 11-15-1715 Harrison NY; m #507; d 5- -1786
 Yonkers NY.
 507-SARAH VINCENT: b 12-3-1715 Yonkers NY.

508-ABRAHAM ODELL: b 4-22-1725; m #509, 4-12-1751; d 6- -1819.
 509-REBECCA DYCHMAN: b 12-10-1727.
 510-JOHN UNDERHILL: b 8-2-1718; m #511; d c4- -1775.
 511-ANN BOWNE: b 6-13-1722 Flushing NY; d 8-16-1786.
 - - -
 512-JOHN HATHAWAY: b 9-17-1653 Duxbury MA; m(1) #513, 3-15-1683 Dartmouth MA; m(2) Patience Hunnewell; d c8- -1732 Dartmouth.
 513-JOANNA POPE: b c1657; d 12-25-1695 Dartmouth MA.
 514-JOHN LANDERS: b ----; m #515.
 515-RACHEL FREEMAN: b 9-4-1659.
 516-JONATHAN RUSSELL, JR: b 11-13-1679 Dartmouth MA; m #517, 5-6-1707; d 9-20-1730 Dartmouth.
 517-JUDITH SAMPSON: b -----; d 8-27-1752 Dartmouth MA.
 538-JOSEPH BOOBYER: b ----; m(1) #539, c1673; m(2) Rebecca Pinson 1-1-1697 Salem MA; d c1706 Marblehead MA.
 539-JEAN CODNER: b c1655; d c1696.
 544-RICHARD MARTIN: b 6-29-1647 Amesbury MA; m #545; d 3-11-1728.
 545-MARY HOYT: b 2-20-1646; m(1) Christopher Bartlett 12-19-1663; m(2) #544.
 546-JOHN WELLS: b ---; m #547, 3-5-1668 Newbury MA.
 547-MARY GREENLEAF.
 548-EZEKIEL WORTHEN: b ---; m #549, 12--4-1661.
 549-HANNAH MARTIN: b 7-1-1643.
 580-HENRY BROWN: b 12-8-1658; m #581, 5-17-1682 Salem Village MA; d 4-25-1708 Salisbury MA.
 581-HANNAH PUTNAM: b 2-2-1663 Salem Village MA; d c1730.
 582-JOSEPH PUTNAM: b 9-14-1665 Salem Village MA; m #583, 4-21-1690 Salem MA; d 1725.
 583-ELIZABETH PORTER: b 10-7-1673 Salem Village MA; d 1746.
 588-JOHN BANCROFT, JR: b 1-25-1682 Lynn MA; m(1) #589, 4-19-1704 Reading or Lynn MA; m(2) wid Mary Mansfield 12-19-1724; d 12-20-1768.
 589-MARY CLARK: b Reading MA; d 10-1-1723.
 590-ELISHA NEWHALL: b 11-20-1686 Lynn MA; m #591, 2-27-1711 Lynn.
 591-JANE BREED: b 10-19-1686.
 592-TIMOTHY ABBOT: b 11-17-1663 Andover MA; m #593, 12-27-1689; d 9-9-1730.
 593-HANNAH GRAVES: b ---; d 11-5-1726.
 594-WILLIAM FOSTER: b 1670 Boxford/Rowley MA; m(1) #595, 7-6-169__; m(2) Margaret Gould 11-13-1744; d 8-29-1755 Andover MA.
 595-SARAH KIMBALL: b 9-19-1669 Boxford MA; d 11-6-1729.
 596-JOHN ABBOT: b 3-2-1648; m #597, 11-17-1673; d 2-10-1728.
 597-SARAH BARKER:
 640-JOHN BRIGGS: b 1-25-1668 N.Kingstown RI; m#641; d 1747.
 641-SARAH REYNOLDS: b ---; d 1746.
 642-DANIEL SWEET, JR: b 11-22-1692; m #643.
 643-NAOMI _____.
 644-WILLIAM TANNER: b ----; m(1) #645; m(2) Elizabeth Reynolds 3- -1729 d c1757.
 645-HANNAH PALMER:
 646-JOHN BRIGGS [same as 640]
 647-SARAH REYNOLDS [same as 641]
 660-EPHRAIM GARDINER: b 1-17-1693; m #661, 4-28-1713; d 4-10-1774.
 661-PENELOPE ELDRED: b c1694; d 4-19-1783.
 662-JONATHAN EASTON: b 1699; m #663; d 3-4-1782.
 663-PATIENCE RODMAN: b 6-5-1706; d 5-9-1739.

664-THOMAS SHERMAN: b 8-8-1658 Portsmouth RI; m #665, 5-26-1702; d 1719 S.Kingstown RI.
 665-LYDIA WILCOX: b c1675; m(1) #664; m(2) Thomas Potter 12-8-1720; d 1756.
 668-THOMAS SHERMAN [same as 664]
 669-LYDIA WILCOX [same as 665]
 670-WILLIAM SHERMAN: b 10-3-1659; m #671.
 671-MARTHA WILBUR.
 672-GEORGE BABCOCK: b 1673 Westerly RI; m #673, 11-28-1694; d 5-1-1756 S.Kingstown RI.
 673-ELIZABETH HALL: b c1671; d 5-8-1762.
 674-SAMUEL PERRY: b ---; m#675.
 675-SUSANNA HAZARD.
 680-EDMUND SHEFFIELD: b 4-5-1694 S.Kingstown RI; m 681, 4-5-1719; d 11-30-1764.
 681-SARAH GARDINER: b 3-18-1698.
 688-GEORGE BABCOCK [same as 672]
 689-ELIZABETH HALL [same as 673]
 692-GEORGE BABCOCK, JR.: b 4-9-1699 Westerly RI; m #693, 12-20-1721; d 1767 Hopkinton RI.
 693-SUSANNAH POTTER: b 9-17-1704 N.Kingstown RI; d Hopkinton RI.
 694-THOMAS WHEELER: b 2-15-1700 Stonington CT; m #695, 11-25-1718 Stonington; d 10-23-1755.
 695-MARY MINER: b 8-4-1699; d 7-28-1750.
 704-WILLIAM SNOW: b 1624 Eng; m #705 c1654; d c1709.
 705-REBECCA BROWNE.
 708-JOHN FIELD: b c1645 Providence RI; m #709.
 709-ELIZABETH EVERDEN: b c1645; d 1698.
 710-JOHN AMES: b 5-24-1647; m #711.
 711-SARAH WILLIS.
 716-JOHN GLADDING: b c1641 Eng; m#717, 1666 Newbury MA; d 4-27-1726 prob Bristol RI.
 717-ELIZABETH ROGERS.
 720-JOHN IRISH: b c1641 Duxbury MA; m #721, 1672; d 2-21-1717 Little Compton RI.
 721-ELIZABETH SAVORY: b 1650; d 3-8-1707.
 722-SAMUEL WILBUR: b Little Compton RI; m #723; d 1740.
 723-MARY POTTER.
 724-JOHN SANFORD: b 6-18-1672 Portsmouth RI; m(1) #725 c1698; m(2) Patience Langworthy 10-9-1722 Little Compton RI.
 725-CONTENT HOWLAND: b c1673.
 896-JAMES BEEBE: b c1682 prob Norwalk CT; m #897, 12-22-1708 prob Stratford CT; d 1750 Danbury CT.
 897-ABIGAIL SHERMAN: b 8-4-1688.
 900-WAKEFIELD DIBBLE: b---; d c1734.
 904-THOMAS BARNUM: b ---; m #905.
 905-SARAH BEARDSLEY: b Stratford CT.
 916-ABRAHAM KIMBERLY: b 3-4-1675 Albemarle/Chowan Co NC; m #917, 5-11-1696 Stratford CT; d 7- -1727.
 917-ABIGAIL FITCH: b c1681.
 928-JAMES BENEDICT, JR: b 1685 Danbury CT; m #929; d c1761.
 929-MARY ANDRUS: bap 5-18-1689 Farmington CT, prob b Waterbury.
 936-SAMUEL HICKOK: b c1643 Farmington CT; m #937 c1677; d 3-5-1695 Waterbury CT.

937-HANNAH UPSON: b c1648; d 1705.
 944-BENJAMIN JUDD: bap 5-4-1690; m(1) #945; m(2) ____; d after 1734 Dan-
 bury/Bethel CT.
 945-SARAH _____.
 952-JOHN HOYT: b 6-21-1669 Norwalk CT; m #953; d 3- -1746 Danbury CT.
 953-HANNAH DRAKE: b c1678; d after 1746.
 960-ROBERT BRUSH: b 6-30-1685 Huntington LINY; m(1) #961; m(2) wid Mary
 Brush.
 964-JOHN IRELAND: b c1687; m #965; d before 1748.
 965-SARAH _____.
 966-PETER LOSEE.
 968-THOMAS BRUSH: b c1651 prob Southold LINY; m #969; d 4-11-1698.
 969-SARAH _____.
 976-JOHN CROSBY: b prob 12-4-1670; m #977.
 977-HANNAH _____.
 978-SAMUEL HOPKINS: b 1682; m #979, 1707.
 979-LYDIA RICH.
 980-CHILLINGSWORTH FOSTER: b 6-11-1680; m(1) Mercy Freeman; m(2) #981;
 m(3) Ruth (Myrick) wid Sears 1731; d 1764 Brewster MA.
 981-SUSANNAH GRAY: b ---; m(1) Nathaniel Sears 10-10-1712; m(2) #980;
 d before 1731.
 982-JOHN WING: b c1680; m(1) Acksah Winslow 10-16-1712; m(2) Bethia
 Winslow 3-5-1713; m(3) #983 7-24-1723; d 6-12-1758.
 983-REBECCA FREEMAN: b ----; m(1)____Vickery; m(2)#982.
 984-MICAJAH SNOW: b 12-22-1669 Eastham MA; m #985, 11-21-1697; d 12-5-
 1753 Eastham.
 985-MERCY YOUNG: b ---; d 1754.
 986-NATHANIEL MYRICK: b 1674 Eastham MA; m #987 c1699; d 11-13-1743.
 987-ALICE FREEMAN.
 992-SAMUEL KEELER: b 1656 Norwalk CT; m #993, 3-10-1681; d 5-19-1713
 Ridgefield CT.
 993-SARAH ST.JOHN: b 1-18-1660.
 1000-JOHN RAYMOND, JR.: b 9-9-1665; m #1001, 3-7-1691; d 4-12-1737.
 1001-ELIZABETH ST.JOHN: b 4- -1673 Norwalk CT.
 1004-THOMAS MERWIN: b 1654 Milford CT; m #1005, 3- -1679 Fairfield CT;
 d after 1716.
 1005-ABIGAIL CLAPHAM:
 1008-HENRY FOWLER: b c1658 Providence RI; m(1) #1009; m(2) Sarah ____;
 d c1732 Eastchester NY.
 1009-ABIGAIL HOYT:
 1010-THOMAS LYON: b 1673 Greenwich CT; m #1011; d c5-1739.
 1011-ABIGAIL OGDEN: b ---; d btwn 9-1752 and 11-26-1760.
 1012-JOSEPH FOWLER: b c1691 Flushing NY; m #1013; d 6- -1724.
 1013-PHEBE HUNT:
 1016-JOHN ODELL: b c1690; m #1017, 10-29-1713; d c1735.
 1017-HANNAH VERMILYEA: b 1690.
 1018-JACOB DYCKMAN: b 5-8-1692; m #1019, 5-16-1716.
 1019-JANNITIE KIERSEN:
 1020-NATHANIEL UNDERHILL, JR: b 8-11-1690 Westchester NY; m #1021,
 4-19-1711; d 11-27-1775.
 1021-MARY HUNT: b 7-22-1692 Westchester NY.
 1022-JOHN BOWNE: b 7-9-1686 Flushing NY; m #1023, 5-21-1714 Flushing;
 d 4-14-1757 Yonkers NY.
 1023-ELIZABETH LAWRENCE: b ---; d 1755.

- - -

1024-ARTHUR HATHAWAY: b ---; m #1025, 11-20-1652 Duxbury MA; d 12-11-1711 Dartmouth MA.
 1025-SARAH COOKE: b 1635; d after 1710
 1026-THOMAS POPE: b 1608 Eng; m(1) Ann Fallowell 7-28-1637; m(2) #1027, 5-29-1646 Plymouth MA; d 10- -1683 Dartmouth MA.
 1027-SARAH JENNEY: b c1616 Leiden Neth.
 1028-THOMAS LANDERS: b c1613; m #1029, c1652; d c1675 Sandwich MA.
 1029-JANE KERBY.
 1030-EDMUND FREEMAN, JR: b c1620 Eng; m(1) Rebecca Prentice 4-22-1646; m(2) #1031, 7-18-1651.
 1031-MARGARET PERRY:
 1032-JONATHAN RUSSELL: b --; m #1033, 2-17-1678; d 12-15-1723 Dartmouth MA.
 1033-HASSADIAH SMITH: b 1-11-1649; d 12-15-1723 prob Dartmouth MA.
 1034-GEORGE SAMPSON: b ---; m #1035.
 1035-ELIZABETH _____.
 1078-CHRISTOPHER CODNER: b ---; m #1079, c1655; d 1660.
 1079-MARY BENNET: b Marblehead MA; m(1) #1078 c1655; m(2) Elias White 2-26-1661; m(3) Richard Downing.
 1088-GEORGE MARTIN: b --; m(1) Hannah ____; m(2) #1089, 8-11-1646 Salisbury MA; d c1686.
 1089-SUSANNAH NORTH: b ---; d 7-19-1692 Salem Village MA.
 1090-JOHN HOYT: b c1612; m(1) Frances ____; m(2) #1091, 1644; d 2-28-1688.
 1091-FRANCES _____.
 1094-ENOCH GREENLEAF: b c1618 Eng; m #1095.
 1095-MARY _____.
 1098-GEORGE MARTIN [1088]
 1099-HANNAH ____; b ----; d c1646 Salisbury MA.
 1160-HENRY BROWN: b c1615; m #1161; d 8-6-1701 Salisbury MA.
 1161-ABIGAIL _____.
 1162-JOHN PUTNAM: bap 5-27-1627 Eng; m #1163, 3-7-1652 Salem MA; d 4-7-1710 Salem Village MA.
 1163-REBECCA PRINCE:
 1164-THOMAS PUTNAM: bap 3-7-1615 Eng; m(1) Ann Holyoke 8-17-1643 Lynn MA; m(2) #1165, 9-14-1666 Salem MA; d 5-5-1686 Salem Village MA.
 1165-MARY ____: b ---; m(1) _____ Veren; m(2) #1164.
 1176-JOHN BANCROFT: b c1656; m(1) #1177, 9-24-1678; m(2) Hannah ____; d 1-25-1740.
 1177-ELIZABETH EATON.
 1180-JOSEPH NEWHALL: b ---; m #1181.
 1181-SUSANNAH _____.
 1182-JOSEPH BREED: b m #1183, 9-27-1683 Lynn MA.
 1183-SARAH FARRINGTON: b ---; d 4-7-1752.
 1184-GEORGE ABBOT: b c1615 Eng; m #1185, 12-12-1646; d 12-24-1681 Andover MA,
 1185-HANNAH CHANDLER: bap 5-22-1630 Eng.
 1186-MARK GRAVES.
 1188-WILLIAM FOSTER: b 1633 prob Eng; m #1189, 5-15-1661.
 1189-MARY JACKSON: b 2-8-1639.
 1190-JOHN KIMBALL: b c1650 Ipswich MA; m(1) #1191; m(2) Hannah Burton 10-29-1707; d c1721.
 1191-SARAH _____.
 1192-GEORGE ABBOT [1184]
 1193-HANNAH CHANDLER [1185]

1280-JOHN BRIGGS: b ---; m #1281; d 1708.
 1281-FRANCES _____.
 1284-DANIEL SWEET: b 1657 E.Greenwich RI; m #1285.
 1285-ELEANOR CARPENTER:
 1292-JOHN BRIGGS [1280]
 1293-FRANCES _____ [1281]
 1320-HENRY GARDINER: b c1645; m(1) Joan _____; m(2) #1321; d 1744.
 1321-ABIGAIL RICHMOND: b 1656; m(1) John Remington c1679; m(2) #1320;
 d 1744.
 1322-SAMUEL ELDRED: b 10-26-1644 Cambridge MA; m #1323; d c1720.
 1323-MARTHA KNOWLES: b RI; d 1728.
 1324-NICHOLAS EASTON: b 2-24-1668; m 1325.
 1325-MARY HOLMES:
 1326-THOMAS RODMAN: b 12-26-1640 Barbados; m(1) _____; m(2) Patience
 (Easton) wid Malines 6-7-1682; m(3) #1327, 11-26-1691; d 1-11-1728.
 1327-HANNAH CLARKE: b 10-28-1667; d 12-22-1732.
 1328-PELEG SHERMAN: b Portsmouth RI; m #1329, 7-25-1657; d 1715
 Kingston RI.
 1329-ELIZABETH LAWTON:
 1330-DANIEL WILCOX: b c1634; m(1) _____; m(2) #1331, 11-28-1661;
 d 7-2-1702.
 1331-ELIZABETH COOKE:
 1336-PELEG SHERMAN [1328]
 1337-ELIZABETH LAWTON [1329]
 1338-DANIEL WILCOX [1330]
 1339-ELIZABETH COOKE [1331]
 1340-PELEG SHERMAN [1328,1336]
 1341-ELIZABETH LAWTON [1329,1337]
 1342-WILLIAM WILBUR: b ---; d 1710.
 1344-JOHN BABCOCK: b 1644 Portsmouth RI; m #1345; d 1685 Westerly RI.
 1345-MARY LAWTON:
 1346-HENRY HALL: b ---; m #1347.
 1347-CONTENT _____.
 1348-EDWARD PERRY: b c1630 Eng; d 1695 Sandwich MA.
 1360-JOSEPH SHEFFIELD: b 8-22-1661 Portsmouth RI; m #1361, 2-12-1685;
 d 2-18-1705.
 1361-MARY SHERIFF: b ---; d 3-17-1718.
 1362-NICHOLAS GARDINER: b --; m #1363.
 1363-HANNAH PALMER.
 1376-JOHN BABCOCK [1344]
 1377-MARY LAWTON [1345]
 1378-HENRY HALL [1346]
 1379-CONTENT _____ [1347]
 1384-GEORGE BABCOCK [672,688]
 1385-ELIZABETH HALL [673,689]
 1386-JOHN POTTER: b c1665 Portsmouth RI; m #1387.
 1387-SARAH WILSON: b 1666; d after 1739.
 1388-ISAAC WHEELER: b 8-6-1673; m #1389; d 6-25-1737.
 1389-MARY SHEPARD: b c1678; d 9-20-1761.
 1390-EPHRAIM MINER, JR: b 1667; m #1391.
 1391-MARY STEVENS:
 1410-PETER BROWNE: b --; m(1) Martha Ford 1626; m(2) #1411, c1630.
 1411-MARY _____.
 1416-JOHN FIELD: b Eng; d 1686
 1418-ANTHONY EVERDEN:

1420-WILLIAM AMES: b 10-6-1605; m #1421.
 1421-HANNAH _____.
 1422-JOHN WILLIS: b --; m #1423.
 1423-ELIZABETH HODGKINS:
 1440-JOHN IRISH: b Eng; m #1441, c1646; d 3-5-1677 Duxbury MA.
 1441-ELIZABETH RISLEY:
 1444-WILLIAM WILBUR [1342]
 1448-JOHN SANFORD: b 6-4-1633 Boston MA; m(1) Elizabeth Seatchurst
 8-8-1654; m(2) #1449, 4-17-1663; d 1-25-1687 E.Greenwich RI.
 1449-MARY GORTON: b prob Warwick RI; m(1) Peter Greene; m(2) #1448.
 1450-SAMUEL HOWLAND: b --; m #1451; d 1716 Duxbury MA.
 1451-MARY _____.
 1792-JAMES BEEBE: bap 1641; m(1) Mary Boltwood 10-24-1668 Hadley MA;
 m(2) #1793, 12-19-1679 Norwalk CT; d 4-22-1728 Danbury CT.
 1793-SARAH BENEDICT: b Southold LINY.
 1794-SAMUEL SHERMAN: b 6-19-1641 Stamford CT; m #1795, 6-19-1665;
 d 2-20-1719.
 1795-MARY TITHERTON:
 1808-THOMAS BARNUM: b c1625; m(1) prob Dolly Thompson; m(2) Sarah Hurd;
 d 12-26-1695 Danbury CT.
 1809-(uncertain - Dolly Thompson or Sarah Hurd)
 1832-ABRAHAM KIMBERLY: b --; m #1833; d 1680 Albemarle/Chowan Co NC.
 1833-HANNAH _____.
 1834-THOMAS FITCH: b --; m #1835, 9-15-1680.
 1835-ABIGAIL GOODRICH: b 6-5-1662; d 11-7-1684.
 1856-JAMES BENEDICT: b 2-6-1650 Southold LINY; m(1) #1857, 5-10-1676
 Norwalk CT; m(2) Sarah (Porter) wid Andrus c1707; d c1717 Danbury.
 1857-SARAH GREGORY: b 12-3-1652; d before 1707.
 1858-ABRAHAM ANDRUS: b 10-31-1648; m #1859, c1682; d 5-3-1693.
 1859-SARAH PORTER: b 12-29-1657; m(1) #1858; m(2) #1856.
 1872-WILLIAM HICKOKS: b ---; m #1873; d c1645.
 1873-ELIZABETH _____.
 1874-THOMAS UPSON: b ---; m #1875, 1-23-1646; d 7-19-1655 Farmington CT.
 1875-ELIZABETH FULLER:
 1888-PHILIP JUDD: b c1649 Farmington CT; m #1889; d 1689 Waterbury CT.
 1889-HANNAH LOOMIS: b 2-8-1658.
 1904-JOHN HOYT: b 7-13-1644 Windsor CT; m(1) #1905; m(2) Hannah ____-;
 d c1711 Danbury CT.
 1905-MARY LINDALL:
 1906-JOHN DRAKE: b 9-14-1649 Windsor CT; m #1907, 3-20-1671; d 7-7-1689
 Simsbury CT.
 1907-MARY WATSON: b 1-11-1651; d 8-7-1693 Simsbury CT.
 1920-RICHARD BRUSH: b c1644 prob Eng; m #1921; d c1711.
 1921-JOANNA SAMMIS: b c1648.
 1928-THOMAS IRELAND: b --; m #1929; d c1711 LINY.
 1929-MARY _____.
 1936-THOMAS BRUSH: b ---; m #1937, c1650; d c1675 Huntington LINY.
 1937-REBECCA CONCKLYNE:
 1952-THOMAS CROSBY: b 1635 Eng; m #1953; d 6-13-1702 Boston MA.
 1953-SARAH _____(possibly Fitch).
 1956-STEPHEN HOPKINS,II: b 1642 MA; m #1957, 5-23-1667; d 4-9-1733
 Harwich MA.
 1957-MARY MYRICK: b 11-4-1650 Duxbury MA.
 1958-RICHARD RICH: b --; m #1959, c1670 Dover NH; d 10- -1692 Eastham.
 1959-SARAH ROBERTS:

1960-JOHN FOSTER: b 10-7-1642; m(1) #1961; m(2) Sarah Thomas 1702;
d 6-13-1732.

1961-MARY CHILLINGSWORTH:

1962-JOHN GRAY: b 1671; m #1963; d 3-31-1732.

1963-SUSANNAH CLARK: b 1674.

1964-JOHN WING: b --; m #1965; d c1683.

1965-MARY _____.

1968-STEPHEN SNOW: b 1636 Plymouth MA; m(1) #1969, 10-28-1663; m(2) Mary
Bigford 4-9-1701; d 12-17-1705 Eastham MA.

1969-SUSANNA DEANE: b ---; m(1) Joseph Rogers, Jr; m(2) #1968.

1970-JOHN YOUNG: b 11-16-1649; m #1971, 9-2-1678; d 1719.

1971-ABIGAIL HOWLAND: b ----; d 4-7-1692.

1972-WILLIAM MYRICK, II: b 9-15-1643 Duxbury MA; m(1) #1973, 5-23-1667;
m(2) Elizabeth (_____) wid Snow; d 10-30-1732 Brewster MA.

1973-ABIGAIL HOPKINS:

1974-SAMUEL FREEMAN: b 5-11-1638; m #1975, 5-12-1658; d c1712.

1975-MERCY SOUTHWORTH: b c1638; d 11-25-1712.

1984-RALPH KEELER: b c1613 Eng; m #1985; d c1672.

1985-SARAH _____.

1986-MARK ST.JOHN: b 1634; m #1987; d 8-12-1693 Norwalk CT.

1987-ELIZABETH STANLEY: b c1635; d c1693.

2000-JOHN RAYMOND: bap 8-6-1637; m #2001, 12-10-1664.

2001-MARY BETTS: b 1646 Guilford CT.

2002-MARK ST.JOHN [1986]

2003-ELIZABETH STANLEY [1987]

2008-MILES MERWIN: b 1623; m(1) #2009, c1646; m(2) Sarah (Platt) wid
Beach; m(3) Sarah (Young) wid Scofield; d 1697.

2009-ELIZABETH _____.

2016-HENRY FOWLER: b Eng; m #2017, 1655 Providence RI; d 1687 Mamar-
oneck NY.

2017-REBECCA NEWELL:

2018-MOSES HOYT: b c1635; m #2019.

2019-ELIZABETH _____.

2020-THOMAS LYON: b c1621 Eng; m(1) Martha Joanna Winthrop; m(2) #2021,
c1654; d 1690 Byram CT.

2021-MARY HOYT:

2022-JOHN OGDEN: b --; m #2023.

2023-JANE BOND:

2024-WILLIAM FOWLER: b 1660 Providence RI; m #2025, 1-24-1680;
d 5- -1714 Flushing NY.

2025-MARY THORN: bap, as adult, 11-29-1711.

2032-JOHN ODELL: b ---; m #2033.

2033-ANNETTE KORTRIGHT:

2034-JOHANNES VERMILYEA:

2036-GERRIT DYCKMAN: bap 3-6-1678 Haarlem NY; m #2037.

2037-REBECCA VERMILYEA:

2040-NATHANIEL UNDERHILL: b 12-22-1663 Flushing NY; m #2041, 10-10-1685;
Greenwich CT; d 11-10-1710 Westchester NY.

2041-MARY FERRIS:

2042-JOHN HUNT: b --; m(1) Alice Baxter 6-16-1670; m(2) #2043;
d 1- -1712 Westchester NY.

2043-GRACE FOWLER:

2044-JOHN BOWNE: bap 3-9-1627 Eng; m(1) Hannah Feake 3-7-1656 Flushing
NY; m(2) #2045, 12-2-1679; m(3) Mary Cook 4-26-1693 Flushing;
d 10-20-1695 Flushing.

2045-HANNAH BICKERSTAFF: b Eng; d 4-7-1690 Flushing NY.

2046-JOSEPH LAWRENCE: b c1677; m #2047, 1690; d 1743.

2047-MARY TOWNLEY:

- - -

2048-ARTHUR HATHAWAY: b Eng.

2050-JOHN COOKE: bap 1607 Leiden Neth; m #2051, 3-28-1634 Plymouth MA;
d 11-23-1695 Dartmouth MA.

2051-SARAH WARREN: b 1614 Eng; d 1676 Dartmouth MA.

2054-JOHN JENNEY: b Eng; m #2055, 9-5-1614 Leyden Neth; d c1643 MA.

2055-SARAH CAREY: b Eng; d 1655 MA.

2060-EDMUND FREEMAN: b c1590 Eng, bap 7-25-1596; m(1) #2061, 6-16-1617
Eng; m(2) Elizabeth _____ 8-10-1632 Eng; d 1682 Sandwich MA.

2061-BENNETT HUDSOL: b --; d 1630 Eng.

2064-JOHN RUSSELL: b --; m #2065.

2065-DOROTHY _____.

2066-JOHN SMITH, JR: b --; m #2067, 1-1-1648 Plymouth MA.

2067-DEBORAH HOWLAND: b Plymouth MA.

2158-JOHN BENET: b ---; m #2159; d 1663.

2159-MARGARET _____:

2178-RICHARD NORTH: b --; m #2179; d 3-1-1667.

2179-URSULA _____: b ---; d 1670.

2188-EDMUND GREENLEAF: bap 1-2-1574 Eng; m(1) #2189; m(2) Sarah (____)
wid Hill; d 3-24-1671 MA.

2189-SARAH DOLE: b ---; d 1-18-1663.

2320-HENRY BROWN:

2324-JOHN PUTNAM: bap 1-17-1580 Eng; m #2325; d 10-30-1662 Salem MA.

2325-PRISCILLA _____.

2328-JOHN PUTNAM [2324]

2329-PRISCILLA [2325]

2352-THOMAS BANCROFT: b ---; m #2353; d 8-19-1691 Lynn MA.

2353-ELIZABETH _____.

2364-ALLEN BREED: b ---; m #2365; d c1707.

2365-MARY _____.

2370-WILLIAM CHANDLER: b --; m #2371.

2371-AGNES BAYFORD:

2376-REGINALD FOSTER: b Eng; m(1) #2377 Eng; m(2) Sarah (____) wid Martin
9-1-1665; d c1681.

2377-JUDITH _____: b Eng.

2378-WILLIAM JACKSON: b --; m #2379.

2379-JOANNA _____.

2380-RICHARD KIMBALL: b 1623 Eng; m(1) Mary____; m(2) Mary____;
d 5-26-1676 Wenham MA.

2381-MARY _____.

2568-JOHN SWEET, JR: b c1630 Eng; m #2569; d 1677.

2569-ELIZABETH JEFFRIES: b 1629; d 1684.

2640-GEORGE GARDINER: bap 2-15-1599 Eng; m(1) Sara Slaughter 3-29-1630;
m(2) #2641, c1645 common law; m(3) Lydia Ballou; d c1677 Newport RI

2641-HERODIAS LONG: b c1623 Eng; m(1) John Hicks 1636 Eng; m(2) #2640;
m(3) John Porter 1665 S.Kingstown RI.

2642-EDWARD RICHMOND: b 1632 prob Newport RI; m(1) #2643; m(2) Amey
Bull; d 1696 Little Compton RI.

2643-ABIGAIL DAVIS: b --; m(1) Richard Usell; m(2) #2642.

2644-SAMUEL ELDRED: b Eng; m #2645; d 1687 RI.

2645-ELIZABETH _____.

2646-HENRY KNOWLES: b c1610 Eng; d c1670 RI.

2648-NICHOLAS EASTON: b 11-12-1644; m #2649, 11-30-1666; d 2-1-1677 RI.
 2649-ELIZABETH BARKER: b ---; d 7-5-1676.
 2650-JONATHAN HOLMES: b Middletown NJ; m #2651; d 1713 Newport RI.
 2651-SARAH BORDEN: b 5- -1644; d 1705.
 2652-JOHN RODMAN: b ---; m #2653; d 1686 Barbados.
 2653-ELIZABETH _____.
 2654-WALTER CLARKE: b 1640 Portsmouth RI; m(1) Content Greenman; m(2) #2655; m(3) Freeborn (Williams) Hart; m(4) Sarah (____) wid Gould; d 5-22-1714.
 2655-HANNAH SCOTT: b 1642 RI; d 7-24-1681.
 2656-PHILIP SHERMAN: b 7-5-1610 Eng; d 1687 Portsmouth RI.
 2658-THOMAS LAWTON:
 2660-EDWARD WILCOX: b Eng; m c1630.
 2662-JOHN COOKE [2050]
 2663-SARAH WARREN [2051]
 2672-PHILIP SHERMAN [2656]
 2674-THOMAS LAWTON [2658]
 2676-EDWARD WILCOX [2660]
 2678-JOHN COOKE [2050,2662]
 2679-SARAH WARREN [2051,2663]
 2680-PHILIP SHERMAN [2656,2672]
 2682-THOMAS LAWTON [2658,2674]
 2688-JAMES BABCOCK: b 1612, Eng; m(1) #2689; m(2) Elizabeth 1669; d 6-12-1675.
 2689-SARAH _____.
 2690-GEORGE LAWTON: b ---; m #2691; d 10-5-1693.
 2691-ELIZABETH HAZARD:
 2720-ICHABOD SHEFFIELD: bap 12-23-1630 Eng; m #2721, 1660 Portsmouth RI; d 2-4-1712 Newport RI.
 2721-MARY PARKER:
 2752-JAMES BABCOCK [2688]
 2753-SARAH _____. [2689]
 2768-JOHN BABCOCK [1344,1376]
 2769-MARY LAWTON [1345,1377]
 2770-HENRY HALL [1346,1378]
 2771-CONTENT _____. [1347,1379]
 2772-ICHABOD POTTER: b 1639 Portsmouth RI; m #2773, 1661; d 1676 Portsmouth RI.
 2773-MARTHA HAZARD: b c1641 Portsmouth RI; m(1) #2772; m(2) Benjamin Mowrey.
 2774-SAMUEL WILSON: b 1622; m(1) #2775 RI; m(2) Elizabeth (_____) wid Sweet; d after 1682.
 2775-MARY TEFFT:
 2776-ISAAC WHEELER: b 1646; m #2777, 1-10-1667; d 6-5-1712 Stonington CT
 2777-MARTHA PARKE: b 10-27-1646 Wethersfield CT; d 2-14-1717.
 2778-JEREMIAH SHEPARD: b 8-1-1648 Cambridge MA; m #2779; d 6-3-1720 Lynn
 2779-MARY WAINWRIGHT: b 1657 Ipswich MA; d 3-28-1710 Lynn MA.
 2780-EPHRAIM MINER: b 5-1-1642; m #2781, 6-20-1666 New London CT.
 2781-HANNAH AVERY: b 10-12-1644 Gloucester MA.
 2832-WILLIAM FIELD: b Eng; m #2833.
 2833-JANE SOTWELL: b --; m(1) ____ Burdett; m(2) #2832.
 2892-NATHANIEL POTTER: b c1614 Eng; m #2893; d 1644 Kingston RI.
 2893-DOROTHY _____.
 2896-JOHN SANFORD: b c1605 Eng; m(1) #2897, c1632 Boston MA; m(2) Bridget Hutchinson; d 1653 Portsmouth RI.

2897-ELIZABETH WEBB:
 2898-SAMUEL GORTON: b 1592; m #2899; d 12- -1677.
 2899-MARY MAPLET:
 3584-JOHN BEEBE: b Eng; m #3585; d 5-18-1650 N.Atlantic Ocean.
 3585-REBECCA _____.
 3586-THOMAS BENEDICT: b 1617 Eng; m #3587, c1640; d 3- -1690 Norwalk CT
 3587-MARY BRIDGUM:
 3588-SAMUEL SHERMAN: bap 7-12-1618 Eng; m #3589.
 3589-SARAH MITCHELL:
 3664-THOMAS KIMBERLY: bap 6-24-1604 Eng; m(1) #3665, 8-28-1628 Eng; m(2)
 Mary Preston c1660. d 1- -1672 Stratford CT.
 3665-ALICE AWOOD:
 3668-SAMUEL FITCH: b ---; m(1) #3669; m(2) _____.
 3669-SUSANNA WHITING:
 3670-WILLIAM GOODRICH: b-- Eng; m #3671, 10-4-1648; d 1676.
 3671-SARAH MARVIN: b 1632 Eng.
 3712-THOMAS BENEDICT [3586].
 3713-MARY BRIDGUM [3587].
 3714-JOHN GREGORY: b ---; m #3715; d 1689.
 3715-SARAH _____.
 3716-JOHN ANDRUS: b ---; m #3717; d 1681.
 3717-MARY _____: b ---; d 5- -1694.
 3718-ROBERT PORTER: b ---; m #3719.
 3719-MARY SCOTT.
 3776-THOMAS JUDD: b Eng; d 11-12-1688 Farmington CT.
 3778-THOMAS LOOMIS: b Eng; m(1) #3779, 11-1-1653; m(2) Mary Judd
 1-1-1663; d CT.
 3779-HANNAH FOX: b ---; d 4-25-1662.
 3808-WALTER HOYT: b c1618 Eng; d c1697 CT.
 3810-HENRY LINDALL.
 3812-JOHN DRAKE: b prob Eng; m #3813, 11-30-1648 Windsor CT; d Windsor.
 3813-HANNAH MOORE: b ---; d 2-16-1686 Windsor CT.
 3814-ROBERT WATSON: b ---; m #3815.
 3815-MARY ROCKWELL.
 3856-THOMAS IRELAND: b ---; m #3857; d c1668 Hempstead LINY.
 3857-JOAN _____.
 3874-JOHN CONCKLYNE.
 3904-SIMON CROSBY: b 1609 Eng; m #3905, 4-21-1634 Eng; d 9-4-1639 Cam-
 bridge MA.
 3905-ANNE (poss Brigham): b Eng; m(1) #3904; m(2) William Tompson
 1645 Braintree MA.
 3912-GILES HOPKINS: b 1605 Eng; m #3913, 1639; d 1690 MA.
 3913-CATHERINE WHELDON.
 3914-WILLIAM MYRICK: b c1602 Wales; m #3915 c 1642 MA.
 3915-REBECCA TRACY: b c1625 Plymouth MA.
 3918-THOMAS ROBERTS: b ---; d c1673.
 3920-THOMAS FOSTER: b 1600 Eng; m #3921.
 3921-ELIZABETH _____.
 3922-THOMAS CHILLINGSWORTH: b ---; m #3923; d before 3-1-1653.
 3923-JOAN _____.
 3924-JOHN GRAY: b 1653; m #3925, 1670; d c1674.
 3925-HANNAH STURGIS: b 1654; m(1) #3924; m(2) Jabez Gorham.
 3928-JOHN WING: b Eng; m(1) #3929; m(2) Miriam Deane; d 1699 Brewster MA
 3929-ELIZABETH DILLINGHAM: b ---; d 1-31-1692.

3936-NICHOLAS SNOW: b 1-25-1595 Eng; m #3937, 6-1-1627 Plymouth MA;
 d 11-15-1676 Eastham MA.
 3937-CONSTANCE HOPKINS: b 1609 Eng; d 10- -1674/1677 Eastham MA.
 3938-STEPHEN DEANE: b ---; m #3939; d 9- -1634 MA.
 3939-ELIZABETH RING: b Eng.
 3942-HENRY HOWLAND: b Eng; m #3943; d 1-17-1671 Duxbury MA.
 3943-MARY NEWLAND: b ---; d 6-17-1674.
 3944-WILLIAM MYRICK [3914].
 3945-REBECCA TRACY [3915].
 3946-GILES HOPKINS [3912]
 3947-CATHERINE WHELDON [3913]
 3948-HENRY FREEMAN: b ---; m(1) Hannah Stearns 12-25-1650; m(2) #3949,
 11-27-1656 prob Watertown MA.
 3949-MARY SHERMAN: b ---; m(1) #3948; m(2) Lewis Allen.
 3950-CONSTANT SOUTHWORTH: b c1615 prob Neth; m #3951, 11-2-1637;
 d 3-10-1679 MA.
 3951-ELIZABETH COLLIER.
 3972-MATTHIAS ST.JOHN: b Eng; d 1669 Norwalk CT.
 3974-TIMOTHY STANLEY: b 1- -1603 Eng; m #3975; d 4- -1648 CT.
 3975-ELIZABETH _____.
 4000-RICHARD RAYMOND: b c1602; m #4001; d 1692 Saybrook CT.
 4001-JUDITH _____.
 4002-THOMAS BETTS: b 1618 Eng; m #4003; d 1688 CT.
 4003-MARY _____.
 4004-MATTHIAS ST.JOHN [3972]
 4006-TIMOTHY STANLEY [3974]
 4007-ELIZABETH _____ [3975]
 4034-ABRAHAM NEWELL.
 4036-SIMON HOYT: b Eng; m #4037; d 9-1-1657 Stamford CT.
 4037-SUSANNA _____.
 4046-ROBERT BOND.
 4048-HENRY FOWLER [2016].
 4049-REBECCA NEWELL [2017].
 4064-WILLIAM ODELL: b c1634 Eng; m #4065; d 1697 Rye NY.
 4065-_____ VOWLES.
 4072-JAN DYCKMAN: b ---; m #4073.
 4073-MAGDALENE _____.
 4080-JOHN UNDERHILL: b c1598 Eng; m(1) Heyltgen de Hooch 12-12-1623
 Neth; m(2) #4081, 1659 LINY; d 7-21-1672 Oyster Bay LINY.
 4081-ELIZABETH FEAKE: b 1633 Watertown MA; d 11- -1675 Killingworth NY.
 4082-JOHN FERRIS: b 1634 Greenwich CT;m #4083.
 4083-MARY JACKSON.
 4084-THOMAS HUNT: b ---; m #4085; d 1694 Westchester NY.
 4085-CECELIA _____.
 4086-HENRY FOWLER [2016, 4048]
 4087-REBECCA NEWELL [2017, 4049]
 4088-THOMAS BOWNE: b 5-25-1595 Eng; m #4089; d 7-18-1677 Flushing NY.
 4089-MARY _____.
 4092-WILLIAM LAWRENCE: bap 7-27-1622 Eng; m(1) _____; m(2) #4093, 1664;
 d 1680 NY.
 4093-ELIZABETH SMITH: b c1643; m(1) #4092; m(2) Philip Carteret 1681;
 m(3) Richard Townley 1685.

- - -

4100-FRANCIS COOKE: b c1580 Eng; m #4101, 6-30-1603 Neth; d 4-7-1663
 Plymouth MA.
 4101-HESTER MAHIEU: b Eng/Fr; d btwn 1666 & 1675 MA.
 4102-RICHARD WARREN: b Eng; m #4103; d 1628 Plymouth MA.
 4103-ELIZABETH (poss March): b c1583; d c1673 MA.
 4134-ARTHUR HOWLAND: b ---; m #4135; bur 10-30-1675 Marshfield MA.
 4135-MARGARET _____: b ---; m(1) _____ Reed; m(2) #4134.
 4728-ALLEN BREED: b 1601; m(1) #4729 unknown; m(2) Elizabeth (_____) wid Knight 1-28-1656; d 3-17-1691 Lynn MA.
 4760-RICHARD KIMBALL: b Eng; m(1) #4761; m(2) Margaret (_____) wid Dow 10-23-16__; d 6-22-1676 Ipswich MA.
 4761-URSULA SCOTT.
 5136-JOHN SWEET: b c1590 Eng; m #5137; d 1637 RI.
 5137-MARY _____.
 5138-ROBERT JEFFRIES.
 5296-PETER EASTON: b 1622 Eng; m #5297, 11-15-1643 Newport RI; d 2-12-1694 Newport.
 5297-ANN COGGESHALL: b 1626 Eng; d 3-6-1689 Newport.
 5298-JAMES BARKER: b 1623 Eng; m #5299, 1644; d 1702 Newport RI.
 5299-BARBARA DUNGAN: b c1629.
 5300-OBADIAH HOLMES: bap 3-18-1610 Eng; m #5301, 11-20-1630 Manchester Eng; d 10-15-1682 Newport.
 5301-CATHERINE HYDE.
 5302-RICHARD BORDEN: bap 2-22-1596 Eng; m #5303; d 5-25-1671 RI.
 5303-JOAN _____.
 5308-JEREMIAH CLARKE: b Eng; m #5309; d 11- -1651 RI.
 5309-FRANCES LATHAM: bap 2-15-1610 Eng; m (1) #10598 Eng; m(2) #5308; m(3) William Vaughan; d 9- -1677 RI.
 5310-RICHARD SCOTT: bap 1605 Eng; m #5311; d c1680 Providence RI.
 5311-CATHERINE MARBURY: b 1617; d 5-2-1687.
 5324-FRANCIS COOKE [4100]
 5325-HESTER MAHIEU [4101]
 5326-RICHARD WARREN [4102]
 5327-ELIZABETH _____ [4103]
 5356-FRANCIS COOKE [4100, 5324]
 5357-HESTER MAHIEU [4101, 5325]
 5358-RICHARD WARREN [4102, 5326]
 5359-ELIZABETH _____ [4103, 5327]
 5382-THOMAS HAZARD: b 1610 Eng; m(1) #5383; m(2) Martha Sherrieff 1675; d 1680 Portsmouth RI.
 5383-MARTHA _____.
 5442-GEORGE PARKER: b 1611 Eng; m #5443; d 1656 RI.
 5443-FRANCES _____.
 5536-JAMES BABCOCK [2688, 2752]
 5537-SARAH _____ [2689, 2753]
 5544-NATHANIEL POTTER [2892]
 5545-DOROTHY _____ [2893]
 5546-THOMAS HAZARD [5382]
 5547-MARTHA _____ [5383]
 5550-JOHN TEFFT: b Portsmouth RI; m #5551; d 1676 S. Kingstown RI.
 5551-MARY _____.
 5552-THOMAS WHEELER: b 1620; m #5553; d 3-6-1686 Stonington CT.
 5553-MARY _____.
 5554-THOMAS PARKE: b Eng; m #5555; d 7-30-1709 Preston CT.
 5555-DOROTHY THOMPSON.

5556-THOMAS SHEPARD: b 11-5-1605 Eng; m(1) Margaret Toutedville; m(2) Joanna Hooker; m(3) #5557 c1647.
 5557-MARGARET BOREDALE.
 5560-THOMAS MINER: b 4-23-1608 Eng; m #5561, 4-3-1634 Rehoboth MA; d 10-23-1690 Stonington CT.
 5561-GRACE PALMER.
 5562-JAMES AVERY: b c1620 Eng; m #5563, 11-10-1643 Gloucester MA; d 4-18-1700 CT.
 5563-JOANNA GREENSLADE: b c1622; d after 1693.
 5798-JOHN MAPLET: b ---; m 5799.
 5799-MARY _____.
 7176-EDMUND SHERMAN: b c1572 Eng; m #7177, c1597; d 3- -1641.
 7177-JOAN MAKIN.
 7328-ABRAHAM KIMBERLY: b Eng; m #7329, 10-4-1602.
 7329-KATHERINE HOWE.
 7342-MATTHEW MARVIN: b ---; m #7343; d 12- -1687.
 7343-ELIZABETH _____.
 7556-JOSEPH LOOMIS: b c1590 Eng; d 11-25-1657 CT.
 7616-SIMON HOYT [4036]
 7617-SUSANNA _____ [4037]
 7624-JOHN DRAKE: b ----; m #7625; d 8-17-1659 Windsor CT.
 7625-ELIZABETH (poss Rogers).
 7626-JOHN MOORE: b ---; m(1) #7627 unknown c1635; m(2) Abigail _____, 6-16-1639.
 7808-THOMAS CROSBY: b c1575 Eng; m #7809, 10-19-1600 Eng; d 5-6-1661 Rowley MA.
 7809-JANE SOTHERTON: bap 3-4-1581 Eng; d 1662 Rowley MA.
 7824-STEPHEN HOPKINS: b c1585 Eng; m(1) #7825 unknown c1604; m(2) Elizabeth (poss Fisher); d 1644 Plymouth MA.
 7830-STEPHEN TRACY: bap 12-28-1596 Eng; m #7831, 1-2-1621 Leiden, Neth.
 7831-TRYPHOSA LEE: b Eng.
 7848-JOHN GRAY: b ---; m #7849; d c1674.
 7849-HANNAH LUMPKIN.
 7850-EDWARD STURGIS: b 1613; m #7851; d 1695 MA.
 7851-ELIZABETH (prob Hinkley).
 7856-JOHN WING: b 1584 Eng; m #7857; d 1630 Neth.
 7857-DEBORAH BATCHELDER.
 7858-EDWARD DILLINGHAM.
 7874-STEPHEN HOPKINS [7824]
 7890-STEPHEN TRACY [7830]
 7891-TRYPHOSA LEE [7831]
 7892-STEPHEN HOPKINS [7824, 7874]
 7896-SAMUEL FREEMAN: b ---; m #7897; d 1639 Eng.
 7897-APPHIA QUICKE.
 7898-JOHN SHERMAN: b 12-26-1613 Eng; m(1) #7899; m(2) Mary (poss Law); d 8-8-1685 Watertown MA.
 7899-MARY _____.
 7900-EDWARD SOUTHWORTH: b ---; m #7901, 5-28-1613 Leiden Neth; d btwn 1613 - 1623 Neth.
 7901-ALICE CARPENTER: b c1590 Eng; m(1) #7900; m(2) William Bradford 8-14-1623 Plymouth MA.
 7902-WILLIAM COLLIER: b ---; m #7903, 5-16-1611 Eng; d before 7-5-1671.
 7903-JANE CLARK.
 8098-ABRAHAM NEWELL [4034]
 8128-WILLIAM ODELL: b Eng; d c1676.

8160-JOHN UNDERHILL.

8161-HONOR PAWLEY.

8162-ROBERT FEAKE: b Eng; m #8163, c4- -1631 Boston MA; d 1668.

8163-ELIZABETH FONES: b 1-21-1609 Eng; m(1) Henry Winthrop 4-25-1629
Eng; m(2) #8162; m(3) William Hallet CT/NY.

8164-JEFFREY FERRIS: b c1610 Eng; d 5-31-1666 Greenwich CT.

8174-ABRAHAM NEWELL [4034,8098]

8186-RICHARD SMITH: b ---; m #8187; d 3-7-1692 Smithtown LINY.

8187-SARAH _____.

- - -

8202-JACQUES MAHIEU: b ---; m #8203.

8203-JEANNE _____.

10592-NICHOLAS EASTON: b 1593 Eng; m(1) #10593 unknown; m(2) Christiana
(Barker) wid Beecher 1638; m(3) Ann Clayton 3-2-1671; d 8-15-1675
Newport RI.

10594-JOHN COGGESHALL: bap 12-9-1601 Eng; m #10595 Eng; d 1-27-1647
Newport RI.

10595-MARY _____.

10598-WILLIAM DUNGAN: b ---; m #10599; d 1636.

10599-FRANCES LATHAM [5309]

10618-LEWIS LATHAM: b 1555 Eng; m(1) #10619 unknown; m(2) Winifred ____;
d 5-15-1655.

11108-ROBERT PARKE: b 1580 Eng; m(1) #11109, 2-9-1602 Eng; m(2) Alice
(_____) wid Thompson c1644 Wethersfield CT; d 2-4-1665 Mystic CT

11109-MARTHA CHAPLIN: bap 2-4-1584 Eng.

11122-WALTER PALMER.

11124-CHRISTOPHER AVERY: b c1590 Eng; d 3-12-1679 New London CT.

15252-THOMAS MOORE: b Eng; d 1645 Windsor CT.

15698-WILLIAM LUMPKIN.

15714-STEPHEN BATCHELDER.

15796-EDMUND SHERMAN [7176].

15797-JOAN MAKIN [7177].

16326-THOMAS FONES.

16327-ANN WINTHROP.

- - -

21198-LEWIS LATHAM [10618].

22218-WILLIAM CHAPLIN.

Appendix B

BIBLIOGRAPHY AND OTHER SOURCES OF INFORMATION

* * *

FAMILY HISTORIES AND GENEALOGIES

- The Essex Antiquarian, Vol I (ABBOT genealogy).
The AVERYs of Groton: Homer P. Sweet: 1891
The BABCOCK Genealogy: Stephen Babcock.
A Monograph of the Descent of the Family of BEEBE: Clarence Beebe: 1905.
Genealogy of the BENEDICTS in America: C.E. & H.M. Benedict.
Historic and Genealogical Record of the Descendants of Richard and Joan BORDEN: Hattie Borden Weld: 1899.
BOWNE Family of Flushing, L.I.: Wilson Bowne: 1948.
John BRIGGS of North Kingstown: Lilla Briggs Sampson.
BUBIER Family Notes: Madeline Mason Bubier: 1959.
Our Rhode Island Ancestors - Jirch BULL: Howard M. Chapin.
A Memorial of Francis COOKE and of His Immediate Descendants: Henry Cooke: 1870.
A CROSBY Family Line: Emerson Crosby Kelly: 1957.
John CROSBY of Yorkshire and Some of His Descendants: 1910.
Pacific Northwest Grandfathers (CROSBY).
The Descendants of John DRAKE of Windsor, Connecticut: Frank B. Gay: 1937.
Descendants of Thomas DURFEE of Portsmouth, R.I.: William F. Reed: 1902.
FIELD Genealogy: Frederick Clifton Pierce: 1901.
A Genealogy of the FOSTER Family: Edward Forster: 1876.
A Likely Story (FOSTER): Francis F. Foster: 1983.
The History of the FOWLERS: Christine C. Fowler: 1950.
FREEMAN Genealogy: 1875.
The GARDINERS of Narragansett: Caroline E. Robinson.
GARDINER-GARDNER Genealogy: Clara Gardner Miller & John Stanton.
Thomas GARDNER and Some of His Descendants (Historic Collection of Essex County, Vol 39): Frank A. Gardner.
The GLADDING Book: H.C. Gladding: 1901.
The GOODRICH Family in America: Lafayette W. Case: 1885.
Genealogy of The GREENLEAF Family: James E. Greenleaf: 1896.
HATHAWAYS of America: Elizabeth Starr Versailles: 1970.
The HICKOK Genealogy, Descendants of William of Farmington: Charles Nelson Hickok: 1938.
The HOWLANDS in America: William Howland: 1939.
A Genealogical History of the HOYT, Haight and Hight Families: David W. Hoyt.
Some Account of the IRELAND Family of LINY: Joseph N. Ireland: 1880.
Descendants of John IRISH: Willis Luther Irish & Stella Bertha (Putnam) Irish: 1964.
Thomas JUDD and His Descendants: Sylvester Judd: 1856.
Ancestors of Evelyn Wood KEELER: Josephine Frost: 1936.

KEELER Family; Ralph KEELER of Norwalk, CT and Some of His Descendants.

History of the KIMBALL Family in America: Leonard A. Morrison and Stephen P. Sharples: 1981.

The KIMBERLEY Genealogy: Donald L Jacobs.

Frances LATHAM, Mother of Governors: Louise Tracy.

Historical Genealogy of the LAWRENCE Family: Thomas Lawrence: 1852.

Herodias (LONG) Hicks - Gardiner - Porter: G. A. Moriarty.

Descendants of Joseph LOOMIS: Elias Loomis.

LYON Memorial, Families of Connecticut and New Jersey: Sydney Elizabeth Lyon: 1907.

Genealogical Sketch of Reinold and Matthew MARVIN (in Genealogy of Connecticut Families): T. R. Marvin.

The MERWIN Family in North America: Miles Merwin Assn.

The Lyon's Whelps - Descendants of Thomas MINER: John W. Miner: 1970.

Genealogy of the Merrick - Mirick - MYRICK Family of Massachusetts, 1636-1902: George B. Merrick: 1902.

Genealogy of the PARKE Families of Connecticut: Frank Sylvester Parks: 1906.

The PERRYs of Rhode Island and Tales of Silas Creek: Rev. C.B. Perry: 1913.

Genealogy of Thomas POPE of Plymouth: Franklin L. Pope 1888.

The PUTNAM Lineage: Eben Putnam: 1907.

RAYMOND Families of New England, 1630-1886: Samuel Raymond.

RAYMOND Genealogy, Descendants of Richard RAYMOND: Samuel E. and Louvera H. Raymond: 1972.

Ancestors and Descendants of William and Elizabeth REYNOLDS of North Kingstown: Thomas A. & Wm. A. Reynolds: 1903.

Richard RICH of Eastham and Some of His Descendants: Evelyn Rich: 1930.

The Descendants of John RUSSELL: Barrett Beard Russell.

The ST.JOHN Genealogy: Orline St.John Alexander: 1907.

The SAMPSON Family: Lilla B. Sampson: 1914.

President John SANFORD of Boston and Portsmouth: Jack M. Sanford: 1966.

One Branch of the Rhode Island SHEFFIELDS: G. Andrews Moriarty: 1950.

A Genealogical History of William SHEPARD of Fossecut, Northampton, England and Some of His Descendants: George C. Shepard: 1889.

SHERMAN Genealogy: Charles Pomeroy Sherman.

A Branch of the SHERMAN Family: Frank Dempster Sherman.

SHERMAN Notes (RIHS papers): G.T. Paine.

The Family of Richard SMITH of Smithtown, L.I.: Frederick K. Smith: 1967.

Descendants of Nicholas SNOW and Constance Hopkins: Corrine A. & Frank B. Snow.

Nicholas SNOW of Eastham and Some of His Descendants: James W. Hawes: 1916.

SNOW Genealogy: Frederick Wheeler Snow.

SNOW Genealogy (NEHG Register): Mrs. Charles A. Alden.

The William SNOW Family: Edwin H. Snow: 1908.

Genealogy of SOUTHWORTHS: Descendants of Constant SOUTH-

WORTH: Samuel G. Webber: 1908.
 The STANLEY Families of America: Israel P. Warren: 1887.
 The STILES Family in America; Genealogy of the Connecticut
 Family: Dr. Henry Reed Stiles: 1895.
 Edward STURGIS of Yarmouth, 1613-1695, and His Descendants:
 Roger Faxton Sturgis: 1914.
 SWEET Genealogy: William E. Sweet.
 William TANNER of North Kingstown and His Descendants: Rev.
 George C. Tanner: 1905.
 William TANNER of South Kingstown and His Descendants: Rev.
 George C. Tanner: 1910.
 The TRACY Genealogy - Some Descendants of Stephen TRACY:
 Sherman W. Tracy: 1936.
 UNDERHILL Genealogy: Josephine C. Frost.
 John UNDERHILL, Captain of New England & New Netherland:
 Henry C. Shelley: 1932.
 History of the WHEELER Family in America: American College
 of Genealogy.
 The Story of Two Lines of Descent From Edward WILCOX of
 Portsmouth, R.I.: Donald W. Blankman: 1984.
 Descendants of Samuel WILSON of South Kingstown, R.I.: Ken
 Stevens.
 A Historical and Genealogical Register of John WING of Sand-
 wich, Mass. and His Descendants, 1662-1881: Rev. Conway
 P. Wing: 1881.
 John and Hannah WING of Brewster, Mass. and Their Descen-
 dants: James H. & Margaret H. Stone: 1988.

* * *

GENERAL GENEALOGICAL MATERIAL

Danbury News-Times, News of Bethel, Family Histories (in
 files of Bethel Public Library)
 Danbury Vital Records.
 Barnstable County Genealogical Notes (Sturgis Library).
 Massachusetts published Vital Records to 1850.
 New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, Vol 32.
 Old Gravestones of Putnam County, N.Y.: Barbara Small Buys:
 1973.
 Genealogy of Long Island Families (from NYG&B records):
 Henry Hoff.
 Westchester Patriarchs, Genealogical Dictionary of Westches-
 ter County Families Prior to 1775: Newman Davis.
 Genealogical Index of Miami Valley, Ohio Pioneers: L.D.M.
 Brien.
 Marriage Records of Clermont County, Ohio, 1800-1850.
 Rhode Island published Vital Records.
 Washington County, R.I. Births, 1770-1850: Alden G. Beaman:
 1976.
 Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island: John O. Austin &
 G. A. Moriarty.
 Ancestry of 37 Rhode Islanders: John O. Austin.
 One Hundred and Sixty Allied Families: John O. Austin.

Wythe County, Virginia 1810 Census.
Genealogy of Mayflower Families: 1985.
New England Marriages Prior to 1700: Clarence Alman Torrey:
1985.
Certain Come Overs: Henry Howland Crapo.
Ancestral Lines Revised: Carl Boyer III: 1980.
The Pilgrims and Other English in Leiden Records: Jeremy O.
Bangs: 1988.

* * *

STATE AND LOCAL HISTORIES

Connecticut

List of Officials of Connecticut and New Haven Colonies.
Record of Service of Connecticut Men in Wars of Revolution,
1812, and Mexican: 1885.
History of A Yankee Church, Two Hundred Years of the First
Congregational Church of Bethel: Lewis E. Goodsell, Sr:
1976.
History of Danbury, 1684-1896: James Montgomery Bailey: 1896
History of Fairfield County: Norman Davis.
Ye Historie of Ye Town of Greenwich: Spencer P. Mead: 1979.
History of Stamford, 1648-1868: Rev. E.B. Huntington.
History of Waterbury: Henry Bronson: 1858.
Proprietary Record of the Town of Waterbury, 1677-1761:
Katherine A. Prichard: 1911.
History of Ancient Windsor: Henry A. Stiles: 1891.

Maryland

The Colonial Clergy of Maryland, Delaware and Georgia: Fred-
erick Lewis Weis: 1950.
Those Incredible Methodists: Gordon Pratt Baker: 1972.
Maryland Census, 1790.

Massachusetts

The Planters of the Commonwealth: Charles Edward Banks.
The Pioneers of Massachusetts: Charles Henry Pope: 1960.
History of Amesbury: Joseph Merrill: 1880.
Historical Sketches of Andover: Sarah Loring Bailey: 1880.
History of Barnstable County: Samuel L. De____: 1890
Abstracts of Bristol County Probate Records, 1687-1715: H.L.
Rounds.
The Mary & John, A Story of the Founders of Dorchester:
Maude Pinney Kuhns.
History of Eastham: Rev. Enoch Pratt: 1840.
History of Hadley: Sylvester Judd: 1976.
The Hammatt Papers - Early Inhabitants of Ipswich, 1633-

1700: Abraham Hammatt.
 The Founders of Marblehead: Thomas E. Gray: 1984.
 The History and Traditions of Marblehead: Samuel Roads, Jr: 1897.
 The Story of the "Old Colony" of New Plymouth: Samuel Eliot Morison.
 Plymouth Colony, Its History and People, 1620-1691: Eugene Aubrey Stratton: 1981.
 The Expedition of the Mayflower Men For Location: Edwin P. Conklin.
 Saints and Strangers: George F. Willison: 1945.
 History of Salem: Sidney Perley: 1928.
 The Devil In Massachusetts: Marion L. Starkey: 1949.
 The Old Families of Salisbury and Amesbury: Daniel C. Hoyt: 1981.
 Sandwich, A Cape Cod Town: R. A. Lovell, Jr.

New York

New York in the Revolution: James A. Roberts: 1898.
 The Dutchess, a periodical of the Dutchess County Genealogical Society, various volumes.
 History of the Town of Flushing: Henry P. Waller.
 History of Putnam County: Pelletreau.
 History of Rye, 1660-1870: Charles W. Baird: 1871.
 History of Southold, Long Island - Its First Settlers: Rev. Ephraim Whitaker.
 The History of Several Towns of Westchester: Rev. Robert Bolton: 1905.

Ohio

History of Butler County: 1882
 Extracts from Cincinnati Directories
 History of Clermont County: Louis H. Everts: 1880.
 Clermont County Records, Vol VI: Robert D. Craig.

Pennsylvania

Historical and Biographical Annals of Berks County, Volumes 1 and 2: Morton L. Montgomery: 1909.

Rhode Island

History of Block Island, 1514-1876: S.T. Livermore: 1876.
 New Shoreham Town Book No. 1: Burgess/Fiske: 1982.
 Providence City Directories.

Westerly and Its Witnesses: Rev. Frederick Denison: 1878.

Virginia

Adventurers of Purse and Person: Annie L. Jester: 1956.
Annals of Southwestern Virginia, 1769-1800, Part 2: Lewis
Preston Summers.
Wythe County Charters: James S. Presgraves: 1972.
Wythe County, A Bicentennial: Mary B. Kegley: 1985.
Wythe County Tax Lists, 1793-1795.
Glimpses of Wythe County: Mary B. Kegley.
St. John's Evangelical Lutheran Church, Wythe County, Vir-
ginia - Its Pastors and Their Records, 1800-1924: I.B.
& Mary B. Kegley.
A Brief History & Census Listing of St. John's Lutheran
Church.

* * *

LIBRARIES AND HISTORICAL SOCIETIES

Most of the above references and some other materials
were read at, and with the cooperation of, the following
libraries:

Bethel, CT Public Library.
Brooks Free Library, Harwich, MA.
Eldredge Public Library, Chatham, MA.
Essex Institute, Salem, MA.
Ladies' Library, Brewster, MA.
LDS Church Library, Mansfield, MA.
New Bedford, MA Public Library.
New England Historical and Genealogical Society, Bos-
ton, MA (and lending library).
Newport, RI Historical Society.
Rhode Island Historical Society, Providence.
Sandwich, MA Public Library.
Scott-Fanton Museum & Historical Society, Danbury, CT.
Snow Library, Orleans, MA.
Sturgis Library, Barnstable, MA.
Wytheville, VA Public Library.

* * *

PROFESSIONAL GENEALOGISTS
AND LIBRARIANS

Two professional genealogists and one historical society librarian did research on this project:

Patricia R. Donaldson, genealogist: Georgetown, Ohio.

Donna J. Williams, genealogist: Maryland Historical Society, Baltimore.

Ione Williams, librarian: Cape May County Historical and Genealogical Society, Cape May Court House, NJ

* * *

FAMILY SOURCES

We are indebted to the following family members and relatives for their valuable contributions of information.

Henry Bushby Hathaway for his notes on the Hathaway and Briggs families, especially the Briggs-Babcock connection.

Grace (Beebe) Stiles, whom we believe to be the compiler of the very extensive notes on the ancestry of Nellie Virginia Brush. These were essential in getting started on that line.

Grace (Harkrader) Hathaway for keeping the above record and providing it and many other bits of information on the Harkrader and McGrew families.

Nancy (Harkrader) Schroeder for keeping and providing many bits of information, including the Dear Julia letters.

Dr. Milton Keene Harkrader and Marge (Rost) Dehls for interesting material on T.T. Harkrader.

Milton Keene Harkrader, Jr. and Morris Cecil for extensive information on the McGrew family.

Alice (Harkrader) Johnson for material on John Harkrader.

Many family members and relatives who provided information for Chapter 21.

* * *

Notes

This and following pages may be used for family notes and other addenda.

Brewster Ladies' Library
Brewster, MA 02631

BREWSTER LADIES' LIBRARY



0 2200 0044626 4

